

Time-Loop Chronicles 3

The Lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Title: The Time-Loop Chronicles 3–
The Lost Medieval Prophecy

Paperback: 365 pages

Language: English

ISBN-10: 1975862090

ISBN-978-1975862091

1st edition Large Print January 2018

Product Dimensions: 8.5 x 11 inches

Author: John V. Panella

Copyright©2017-2018 All Rights Reserved!

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Preface

This work was created based on an idea that I the author had, and wanted to share, but realized it must be in novel form. And although this third book in the series of the Time-Loop Chronicles is also science fiction, it is based on certain scientific facts that have been sealed from the average every day person.

This final aspect of the trilogy will tie together the entire Divine Secret Garden tetralogy, and link it all together to reveal a mystery and a revelation.

Before we continue to enter the final book of this series, it must be understood that often fiction and science link together, it does not mean that it lacks reality. This story reveals clues and in those signs, they reveal the key to the codes.

The adventures of “The Lost Journal did not come to an end, as one might expect. Many twists and turns led William towards his Paradise, so it seemed, just like his predecessor Tim.

Yet what became of William’s family, and the entire soul group? What happened to Marie, William’s wife of times past, and Beth and Mark his son and daughter.

And what about Sunilo and Matthias who never attended the great feast, what happened to them? We also wonder what took place with Agape and Aggie and Laura Thol with her husband and partner Max Stram.

We know they eventually appear at the Great Feast along with William, but how did they get there? What had their individual journeys been like? And what really was the Great Feast?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

This new book called, "The Lost Medieval Prophecy & The Serpentine's Mirror," begins to reveal how the lives of everyone intersect throughout all periods of time. It reveals how each true soul has a mission and a purpose, and once it is fulfilled then they can establish their return to paradise.

Amazingly, everything seems so rather organized even when speaking of different time-loops. And yet, seemingly it is the furthest thing from the given appearance of things.

The Lost Medieval Prophecy reveals that a mistake occurred where multiple time-loops had crossed over and merged together. This created great confusion in the end days.

Memories were merging, and although due to frequency changes, as the memory of those of the past merged into those of the future, multiple and unique and distinct memories were perceived, leaving the ones who were able to witness this odd mystical behavior a little rattled, while everyone else perceived that those individuals were losing their minds.

This is a story of William's family and friends discovering what had occurred over multiple time-loops that seemed to have amalgamated into an even newer one.

Memories had crossed over to create a blending of multiple time-loops during the same proceedings, proving that all-time is the same time, even when it had obviously morphed into a new period of changed events.

This book will begin to explain the futuristic oddity that has been labeled the Mandela Effect. As well as tell a story how one soul-group

Time-loop Chronicles 3

begins to recall multiple lost time-loops as it bleeds together with the one they are within.

The Serpentine's Mirror is a special connector to the matrix of the world. It holds very deep secrets as to what has been occurring in multiple lifetimes. Eventually it will reveal an ancient Prophecy that had been discovered long ago, but now it is lost in time, or is it?

The Prophecy will reveal what happens in the last days upon earth as to how certain people awaken, whereas the majority do not. And when this occurs something remarkable and otherworldly begins to manifest.

In truth the rapture as many believe does not occur, but changes happen within humanity that leaves those remaining disoriented as to what has transpired concerning certain people that seem to have vanished from the planet, yet did they?

Now it is time to unravel the ancient mystery that has been sealed for a very long time. The Mystery of the Lost Medieval Prophecy & The Serpentine's Mirror...

All names and places although may be similar to what we perceive as reality, are simply fictional characters created as a storyline as if to ask the question, what if?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Table of Contents

The Journey Begins

Time-Loop Chronicles 3 1

Preface 2

Table of Contents 5

- (1) Friar Giovanni Goes to the Vatican 7
- (2) Mark and Beth's Dream Date 12
- (3) Meeting with Pope Gregory 19
- (4) 'The Regression 22
- (5) 'The Serpentine's Mirror 31
- (6) 'The Mind-Meld and the Theft 45
- (7) 'The Revelation 53
- (8) On the Lamb 56
- (9) Vatican Guard is deployed 59
- (10) The Journey across the Stormy Sea 62
- (11) Mark doesn't awaken from his Regression 73
- (12) Giovanni meets Walter in the Afterlife 77
- (13) Mark Meets William Out of Body 90
- (14) Waking Up on the Beach 95
- (15) Returning from the Soul-Travel adventure 102
- (16) From Montpellier to Toulouse 112
- (17) Mark learns of the Lost Journal 126
- (18) Giovanni meets the Abbot William 130
- (19) Monks scramble over the loss of the Serpentine's Mirror 143
- (20) The Discovery of the Lost Medieval Prophecy 149
- (21) Pope Gregory Orders the Death of Friar Giovanni 167
- (22) Everything is changing what do we do? 178
- (23) Giovanni, the Abbot and the Monk are Executed. 190
- (24) Marie's Dream 199
- (25) Giovanni and Mark Rejoin Together 209
- (26) Beth goes to India 213
- (27) Matthias is introduced 225
- (28) Sunilo had entered another dimension 238
- (29) Marie retrieves the Mirror and the Prophecy 244
- (30) The Mandela Effect Quandary 258
- (31) The Lost Medieval Prophecy 267
- (32) The Story of Mary Magdalena from the mind of Marie 271
- (33) Mark Writes the Divine Secret Garden under the name John 284
- (34) Interpretation of the Prophecy 291
- (35) Agape and Aggie finalize plans 298

Time-loop Chronicles 3

- (36) The Mystery of the Mirrored Strategy 311
- (37) The Serpentine's Mirror returns to the Vatican 326
- (38) The Father seals his children prior to the Harvest 334
- (39) The Mission 352
- (40) Returning Home 363
- DISCLAIMER** 365

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(1) Friar Giovanni Goes to the Vatican

“By the time I had reached the Vatican in Rome, I stood there before the gate waiting for my entry and wondering, why it was the Holy Father would desire my presence for a personal dialog.

When the large gate opened, I was greeted by none other than the newest member of the Pope's conclave, Cardinal Peter, or Pierre of Tarentaise.

There was speculation that since Pierre was moving up very rapidly, that Pope Gregory was grooming him to become the next Vicar, but of course, that was only rumor.

I really didn't know what to expect, as I was led through a maze of hallways, which entered a myriad of rooms, I was then taken to the Papal office where I was instructed to take a seat and wait for the Holy Father to enter.

I sat there reluctantly for what seemed like an hour, and wondering why I was summoned to meet the Great Pontiff...”

Giovanni was born in the area of Tuscany, had he spent years as a Friar of the Franciscan Order representing the faith, and spent a good portion of his life writing about the mysteries of God, of whom he termed as, ‘the Father.’

He learned about the simplicity of life from the average soul, as well as, he was granted a communion as of recent with one auspicious teacher, Thomas Aquinas, who at times, they had to agree to disagree; but often were congruent in their thoughts.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Giovanni played a propitious role in the Church. He was a senior faculty member at the University of Paris. He was well liked by his students for his academic prowess.

He was very devoted to the church as well as had great love for Jesus Christ. He looked up to his childhood protégé, Saint Francis of Assisi, whom also believed that Jesus was the beginning and the end of all things. Giovanni was even given the auspicious title 'Seraphic Doctor,' as he was often perceived likened unto an angel.

He had been Born in Bagnorea of Umbria in 1221, which was about 90-kilometers northeast of Roma, he became a Franciscan at the age of 22. He was born of his parents Giovanni di Fidanza and Maria Ritell.

It was said that Saint Francis of Assisi was credited with healing Giovanni as a boy of a serious illness.

Finally, his teaching career ended when he was elected as the General Minister in 1257. His service lasted for almost 17-years and was wrought with controversy over some issues, until he and his work were cut short mysteriously.

The controversies he encountered led into heresies of the day where the belief that the Holy Spirit could replace Jesus, as well as the Church, and even Scripture.

Giovanni was a good administrator and effectively governed through organization. He offered the other Friars of the order a revitalized spirituality, based on the vision and insights of Saint Francis.

Giovanni was a mystical writer, he was able to combine his writings along with the more practical aspects of life united with the

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

doctrines of the Church. One could easily see that his teachings and writings were filled with compassion and kindness, and he offered greater hope than most.

Yet it was much more than that, his stature was growing exceedingly in that it granted him the ability to be instrumental in procuring the election for Pope Gregory, and now maybe that assistance that he gave unto Gregory is about to be repaid by the Pontiff, in full.

Giovanni never considered his work to be on a grand scale of things that it would be heralded. His strong devotion to Christ was evident in everything he taught and believed, so he kept himself unguarded when it came to the dangers surrounding him.

Discussing often with his companions, he would constantly seek to know more about the strange traditions that everyone followed, without any real thought, as if all were mesmerized into a trance, and it also appeared as if we were being led by an unseen hand that mysteriously invaded our lives, and sometimes he reckoned that this guidance was not benevolent.

Yet few if any would ever take the time to examine this quandary and search for deeper insight as to the conflicts of our perceived reality. His loyalties were strong, and he would not veer too far away from the instructions and guidance of the church. Still, there had been a few real answers to life's enigmatic mysteries that he would continue to seek for the rest of his life.

As Giovanni waited for the Pontiff to enter he began to day dream revealing, "I had spent some time in my life under the tutelage of great thinkers such as, Alexander of Hales, John of Rochelle, and even when I

Time-loop Chronicles 3

was just a child, under, St. Francis of Assisi, and of course Thomas Aquinas.

Since the return of Thomas Aquinas to Napoli, a highly regarded individual, whom had been of the Dominican Order. We had come together, and I had learned some fascinating insights by one of the best. He was known as the great philosopher, as well as a theologian and Doctor.

He often spoke of the Metaphysics, a science of the beyond. Some of his theories were a little bizarre, however, he held great respect among the notables that saw him as someone beyond his time, and in truth; they may have been correct.

He once told me, “Friar Giovanni di Fidanza, you have shown me great wealth of knowledge and discernment, and within you lies a secret from beyond the grave.”

I had no idea what he was trying to reveal... beyond the grave? This may have been too esoteric even for me, and yet deep down within my soul, I felt I knew exactly what he was referring to.

I had often wondered about many things that most would have never even granted themselves a second thought. As the masses would eternally follow, I would often contemplate, “Stop, where are we heading, what are we really following, does anyone really know?”

Of course, Thomas did not spend too much time trying to unravel my mind, he kept it simple, yet there were times one could see he was overburdened with some inner-knowing and he desperately wanted to reveal it to someone, and I obviously had become that someone.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

It was then as I continued within my thoughts, that the Vicar himself, Pope Gregory X, walked into the room with a small limp but appeared healthy enough, and he was carrying what look like a thick piece of crystal or glass.

This is when my life's direction would change forever.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(2) Mark and Beth's Dream Date

I was sitting there lost to the world when the waiter had asked me, "And you sir, what would you be having this evening?" As if being awakened out of a deep stupor, my sense came back to me while staring at the menu, as if it was the first time I had looked at it, "Oh, um, I'll have the spaghetti with meat balls and lots of sauce."

I always loved the sauce at our favorite Restaurant where my girlfriend Beth and I go often. It is called, 'Little Tuscany', a small Italian restaurant on the south side of town. As I was preparing my napkin to be placed upon my lap, Beth looked over to me with this yearning to know why I seemed so lost to the world.

"Is it me, or have you vanished into the nexus again?"

Looking up at Beth seeing this frustrated look upon her face, I realized once again I have not been the best date, I replied, "Sorry Beth, but it happened again."

"Oh, you mean the dream?"

"Yes, I can't fathom why this is happening or what it means, I keep having the same dream, yet deep down I am in desperation trying to unravel the answers and interpret this strange internal revelation."

Beth started twisting in her chair realizing there was not much she could do to keep my attention her way, so she decided to go along with this diversion that I have allowed once again to interfere into our moment of togetherness, which happens to be our sixth anniversary since we first began seeing each other.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

I know, I know as I pondered within, why don't we just get married? I guess maybe it is because my mind is so occupied with other things I dare not go that way, yet.

Beth then sat up and leaned forward in her chair appearing to be genuinely interested and said, "Okay, tell me all about it and let's see if we can establish anything different than before."

Beth is a regression therapist, and she is very good, Mark led her into this field because he had first known her teacher, and Mark had also gone through previous regressions, so nothing that Beth was hearing was hitting her from left field, but it simply was not the time and place to be talking about such things. Yet I could not help myself, this specific dream had been plaguing me.

"Well Beth, it is like before, I am talking to these two people, I believe they are my parents in this setting, the problem is, I do not know who these people are from a contemporary point of view, although they were very familiar, almost like a misplaced memory."

Beth interrupted, "Is this the area of the dream where you were a young boy."

"Yeah, I was young, maybe no more than 12, I was talking to them about problems I was having in school, they were upset that I was not fitting in, especially my mother in the dream she was not happy about my attitude on things in general.

I kept telling them that I was different, I saw myself as odd compared to everyone else. I mean the feelings all seemed so real and authentic, as if I truly lived this life, but I cannot recall this setting, at least within my current memory.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

These people, whoever they are; were strange to me, yet in another sense they seemed familiar, like a lost memory. I don't know who they were, although the feeling I got deep within me was a sense of connection, a deep connection; as if I had always known them. Does any of this make sense to you?"

As Beth began to lower her eyes to think about my dilemma, she said, "Mark, as I stated before, are you sure it is not a past life?"

Obviously, this would be right up Beth's alley due to her talent of regression therapy.

"I don't think so Beth, because it seems contemporary, if past lives are real, wouldn't it be like another period in the past, prior to this life?"

"Why do you think it is contemporary, maybe it was like 40-years ago, prior to your being born, that would still seem as if it was present-day, because our world's setting doesn't change that much; especially during the last 40 years. Maybe you died young in that life. It seems you were having trouble coping, maybe you didn't."

"Didn't what?"

"Cope! Maybe you offed yourself or something, maybe a drug overdose, I don't know, but I am simply trying to give an explanation as to why the setting seemed somewhat contemporary."

"I guess that is possible, but that answer doesn't feel right. There was something else that happened that might change your interpretation."

"What was that?"

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"This time the dream took me to where I ran upstairs after yelling at the parents, saying, "You just don't understand, you don't get me, you won't accept that I am different and not like anyone else."

I then threw something, of what appeared to be a magazine or comic book that I had in my hands on to the floor, as I ran upstairs in total frustration."

"Okay, you have told me that part of the story before, so what's different?"

"Well, I went back to my room and jumped on to my bed sideways, with my head hanging over one side and my legs over the other, and then I hear a knock."

"Was it your parents or those who appear to be your parents?"

"No, not exactly, it was, I think it was my sister. She called out to me behind the door and said, Mark, open up we need to talk."

"She called you Mark? Oh, that is interesting."

"Why is that?"

"Having the same name in two connecting lives, hmmm, it's just interesting... go on."

"Again Beth, I am not so sure it was another life, or, maybe some other time. Oh, I don't know, none of this makes any sense to me."

"Just keep going...Okay, you're saying this girl, possibly your sister, the one knocking at the door is speaking to you; and then what?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Well, I told her to come on in, and she began to discuss with me about how I needed to tone it down some, how I was only exasperating the problem, and making it all worse. I asked her, ‘What was I to do?’”

She replied, “Just tone it down, you are getting into too much trouble and you’re only going to make things more problematic for you with mom and dad.”

I then replied, “How am I supposed to handle this, how can I become something I am not.”

The girl in the dream then said, “Reinvent yourself.”

Beth responded, “Oh, that is weird, that sounds like something I would say. Okay, go on... tell me more.”

As Beth leaned even closer to me having this air of deep interest, I broke the news.

“Beth, that girl that came in, the one that was trying to help me deal with my problems, that girl... my sister... whoever she was.”

Beth quickly vibrating her head back and forth was desperately waiting for me to finish, “...Yeah, that Girl... go on!”

Mark appeared perplexed and looked down towards his plate of pasta that had been inserted by the waiter during this conversation, and in a whisper, he said, “Umm, she was you.”

Beth eyes had opened wider, as she glared at Mark, as if being startled by this weird and unacceptable epiphany, said,

“Ha?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"Beth, the girl was you, when you were younger, I know it was you."

"Me?"

"Yeah, you? My sister was you, but her name was Liz."

"I'm not your sister..."

"I know you're not my sister!"

"Yuck, that's weird, almost sort of sick, I am dating my brother... But then again, it was just a dream, a very strange dream, right?"

"I don't think it was just a dream... Beth, it was not from this life, but it is obviously from our time, except maybe a few years earlier, when we were growing up. Somehow, someway you and I are brother and sister in some corresponding time-line, like a parallel world. And do you want to hear the strangest thing of all?"

"Yeah, I am beyond interested now? And I also find it interesting that your name was the same, but mine was different."

"Uh, not really... Beth!!!" Emphasizing her name.

Mark continued... "What is your full name sweetheart?"

"Elizabeth..."

It was as if a two by four hit her across the head and she giggled to herself saying, "Oh my god! Liz! Elizabeth, Beth, Liz...Oh my god!!!"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark continued... “The man downstairs, the one I believe is my father in that otherworld, for some reason, I remember something about him as I was growing up, but I am not sure it was anything he had told me, somehow it interjected into the dream....” As Mark paused.

“Hey, don’t stop there!” Beth cried out.

“Well, what I had learned was that he was from another time, that he had lived through this life, already, and he had returned to make right what had gone wrong. And the word that kept being repeated that was stuck inside my head was,

‘Time-Loop!’”

“Geeze Louise...” Beth clamored. “You mean like we have lived this same life before, but some things changed, like you were my brother and now my boyfriend?”

Mark gave this look of not being sure, as his shoulders raised while he extended out his hands and arms with a grimace upon his face said, “That is what it appears!”

Beth responded with uncertainty, “Not sure I am ready for this.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(3) Meeting with Pope Gregory

As the Pope began to speak he looked at Friar Giovanni and said, "How have you been my friend."

"As you know I have not been as active lately, most of the time I spend reading great literature and writing, however, I am still fulfilling my duties as General Minister as I have done for the last 16-years. And although I am 52 now I still feel strong."

"I certainly hope you are well and in good health."

Giovanni just shrugged his shoulders up and down and with a head and hand gesture, he revealed that he was well. He then spoke, "I am a simple Friar Father, one that would not make an impression upon your Holy See, I have sought within asking why was I chosen for this meeting?"

Gregory then chuckled a little and replied, "My son you have far underestimated your value and worth. I know much about your work and you have made a great impression on many, in fact, without you I may not even be sitting here today."

"I am greatly humbled, Father."

"As you know you have been summoned here and I am certain that you have pondered over why I have petitioned you?"

"Yes, my Vicar, I have remained uncertain about this most holy conference."

As the Pontiff sat down holding this strange crystal glass in his hand, he continued...

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Friar Giovanni, I have called for your presence for two reasons, first I am rewarding you with the title of, Cardinal Bishop of Albano, and I also insist on your presence at the great Second Council of Lyons next year.

And secondly, and most importantly, and no one else should learn of this, I believe you can be an asset to the Vatican and of course this Papal office. I want you to come work for us.”

“Holy Father, I still have my duties as Minister General.

“What I am offering you is far greater than your present situation. What I am holding in my hand is going to change your perception of many things, in fact it will change your life. I know that I can trust you, because... trust is most important.”

“Yes, indeed Holy Father, without trust there is nothing.”

“Friar, this odd glass is not from our time or our world. It is called, **‘The Serpentine’s Mirror.’** However, for our concern, it has been renamed, **‘The Chrono-Frequency Optimizer.’**”

“I am but a mere Friar and I do not understand such words.”

“You shall in time my friend, in time you will come to realize it is a time dispersal reactor. The terms and words I use are from the future, as is the name and identity of this mirror. It functions beyond our understanding of time itself.”

“The Future? I know nothing of this sort alchemy, are you sure you have chosen this Friar correctly?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Gregory sat back and then uttered, "Thomas Aquinas referred you to me, and we have had many discussions concerning this decision, both of us have concluded that you will fit in just fine with the others."

"There are others?"

"Yes indeed, you will be part of a group."

As the Pope opened up a parchment he began to read the letter from Thomas Aquinas recommending Friar Giovanni."

To the Great Pontificate Holy Father Pope Gregory X,

As you know the information about the Mirror must indeed be passed on so that the essence of time is continued, whereas Holy Father, our knowledge of this mystery must pass forward to others who vow to keep this mystery clandestine, until the loop ends. No one must ever speak of this.

You have informed me during our many conversations that we now lack one among the twelve; yet we must continue the project. Time is of the essence, and as we cannot afford to pass down certain critical understanding to a novice. We must seek for those who contain within themselves a deeper resonance, a deeper knowing, a hidden countenance of mystery; one that will assure absolute confidence within the Church.

Thereby, I am asking you to appoint Friar Giovanni of the Franciscan Order, Minister General, Master of Theology, and due to the rise of his stature, the Franciscan order is the most prominent order in the church today.

I have been personally studying with him and have been digging in to the depth of his essence in these last eight months and I have great trust in him, I ask humbly that he be chosen to become the new facilitator concerning the secret project-

In great respect to the Holy See,

Signed, *Thomas Aquinas.*

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(4) The Regression

Today is the day that Beth agreed to do a regression to see if they could surmise more detail as to what happened in this parallel life where they were possibly brother and sister.

Mark had decided earlier after having these dreams to do a regression with the elderly lady friend that was quite experienced in this field, the one who had taught and trained Beth, Ms. Wickenheimer, which led Beth into this arena. He was desirous to find out more information about this strange dream that he kept having.

The good news was, the regression seemed successful according to Mark, but his therapist told him that it had failed. Mark was very confused as to why his therapist thought it was a failed regression.

Evidently, she told him that he seemed to be speaking of a parallel life and not a past life, and she had told him that something must have gone wrong, that she does not enter that area of expertise.

He revealed to her that he had been having all these dreams of the same event, and he truly thought it was a contemporary parallel reality, and that is when his therapist said, "Well, then that must be it. That is why the regression failed, because you were expecting this, and this is what you ended up retrieving from your own mind."

Mark however, was not convinced, he said, "Then why do I have these dreams?" His therapist replied, "Obviously there is something in your psyche concerning family issues, and it is playing out in the form of a dream."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

She continued... "You never told me much about your family, could it be there is something tied together with your relationship with the family you have now?"

Mark appearing very uncomfortable said, "I don't know who my family is, I was adopted, never met my parents, I have no clue who they are."

"Then, there you go," the therapist uttered. "You are obviously dealing with a discomfort, a feeling that you were betrayed by not knowing your birth parents, and you are conjuring up the idea of having a different family, and Beth as your girlfriend becomes part of the play while you try to fit her in as your sister. It all makes total sense."

Mark was not impressed, he said, "If I was making it all up then why was I inventing up a story where I didn't belong, that I felt I was odd, and that I wasn't getting along with my parents?"

His therapist smiled and said, "Don't you get it? You were abandoned by your real parents, and left to strange people, being adopted. Of course, you would feel like you are odd, and that you don't belong, and it is spreading into your dreams. It makes total sense."

Mark still not buying into her conjecture, was disappointed in the therapist's theory, but he didn't want to argue, he responded by saying, "Maybe you are right, it just seemed so real."

"I bet!" The therapist replied, "It must have felt very real because it touches deeply as to who you are within, we're talking about your life in distress."

It was then Mark decided to use Beth's skill as a regression therapist and to see if she could help him enter this same parallel world

Time-loop Chronicles 3

without obfuscating it. Maybe through her they could find the answers via her expertise.

Beth agreed to try her hand at it to see if she would get the same result proving it had been a successful regression. Now most regressions should not be controlled by the therapist, one must allow the soul's mind to determine what will be revealed.

You never know where you will end up. However, if the therapist is well trained, they can often direct you to a point of connection, but beyond that they shouldn't adlib.

Beth was just as curious, possibly even more than Mark as to the possibility that in a parallel life they were brother and sister, and to top it all off, in this life they both had different parents, each one wondered why and how this could be if it truly was a parallel life.

Why didn't they have the same parents? Do parallel lives change that much? She also wondered in her thoughts; could this be why they never got married, because there was this underlying issue haunting them, and neither one tried to push the envelope too far?

At that point there was a soft knock on the door.

Beth's aunt decided to come over and watch this regression, she was also curious. When Marie entered the room, this was the first time Mark had met Marie.

Beth spoke of Marie often, but Mark never got the chance to meet her. Marie felt as if she was killing two birds with one stone, getting the chance to meet Mark as well as having the opportunity to watch Beth do her thing again.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Beth had told Marie that when Mark had been having these dreams that they were both living in a very contemporary setting, and Mark had revealed that he and Beth were brother and sister in his dream. Marie was very interested.

As Mark and Marie made eye contact for the first time, each of them had this strange overwhelming memory twinge. As their eyes connected it was obvious that both thought they were seeing ghosts of a time past, but neither one could place this odd enigmatic memory into their contemporary reality.

Marie spoke first, "Hi Mark, I'm really happy to meet you, Beth speaks very highly of you and I am thrilled to finally put a face to the boyfriend."

Marie pauses a second and then continued, "...a face that appears rather familiar to me, to say the least..." As confusion seemed to set in for them both.

Mark having a look on his face of bewilderment replied, "Have we met before, why is it that you seem so familiar?"

Beth then interrupted, "Listen, we all look like someone, but we came here to do a regression, so we need to get started, but I feel like there is something I am forgetting."

Mark looked at Marie, as Marie looked back, and both had this puzzled look on their faces, yet neither one could figure it out, but the answer they were seeking was closer than the tip of their nose.

Beth then directed Marie to sit on the chair and hold a tape recorder, while Mark was led to the couch.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

It was then Beth had begun to create an illustration to help Mark enter a deep relaxation into the regression, she said, “I am going to try something new, something I learned on my own, on how to bring a person so deep into the regression they won’t be completely aware of it consciously, and all the while we can record the event.”

She continued, while speaking in this low tone, “If Mark doesn’t know that these events are happening from his level of awareness here, then hopefully, he won’t be able to invent the story, therefore verifying the regression as a valid event.”

As Mark was listening to the soothing voice of Beth doing her thing, he raised from the bed almost as if he received an electric shock, he then looked over to Marie, and said, “Oh my God, I know who you are now...”

Both Beth and Marie looking at each other while being startled, and in one voice said, “WHO?”

Mark then snickered and then began to speak, “You’re her!”

Marie responded, “Who?”

“The one in my dream, you are my mother in my dream.”

Beth then readjusting her seating position looked over to Mark and said, “Are you sure?”

“No doubt about it, it is her.”

Beth said, “But you never met my aunt before, and you are now saying she is the one in your dreams, and I am your sister? That

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

certainly could not have come from your mind if you never met her before?"

"Yeah, as odd as that sounds, she was my mother and you were my sister, now I am curious, who was my Father? Is he around? Does he exist in this life? What changes were made that set things on a different path?"

Beth and Marie were very close and often they wondered if they had been mother and daughter in a past life, but most of that was just idle talk. Neither one ever made a big deal about it, and never really dwelt on it.

This new revelation that Mark sprung on them was not that farfetched to either of them, and now more than ever they were desirous to know more about this life of Mark in some contemporary setting.

Beth now being more determined than ever began the regression again. She was talking about the beautiful snowcapped mountains and the spring air, and its beauty as it blended into the blue sky. As she attempted to bring Mark into a calmer vibration.

The surrounding terrain was plush green, with a forest in the background, she continued to describe this peaceful paradise, as even Marie was starting to phase out a little. Mark was peaceful as he lied there listening to the calm soothing voice of Beth.

She then described how Mark was plummeting lower and lower into a new phase of mind. She began to describe being on an elevator that kept going further down; and each time it made it to the next level she would count off from ten to one.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

She then described the moment that she wanted Mark to enter a parallel life with herself and Marie being contemporary souls of this life that somehow blend into a parallel world. She then said, "It is time to meet your family at the nexus."

As she continued she then went to a different level of regression asking his higher-mind to connect with the experience by showing deeper insight as to what happened in a contemporary life, but doing so would mean Mark would not be conscious enough to feel or see the events from his life-setting here and now.

In fact, he would go so deep into the regression that he will begin to relive the person he was, in this other lifetime, yet keeping his own identity secret, therefore the event could not be invented or made up by his own mind.

Beth continued, "Go deeper, and deeper you are going so deep you will bypass this life and enter the other. Six, five, four, deeper and deeper, level after level, deeper and deeper, three, two, you are almost there, you are about to relive your life once upon a time." And then Beth paused a few seconds and said, "ONE..."

"Can you hear me Mark?"

Mark can you hear me?"

Mark began to slowly form words, and coming from his lips was this strange language. "Ego Ioannes frater Ordinis Franciscan."

Beth looked over at Marie and neither one had a clue as to what was being said.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Beth then asked, "Could you please translate the language into English?"

A few seconds went by and Mark began to speak in English, "I am Friar Giovanni of the Franciscan Order"

Beth clamored, "Oh my god, I think we overshot this one."

"Mark, can you hear me? Listen to my voice, what is happening? Where are you?"

Mark continued, "Strange voices within my thoughts, I do not know Mark, for I am Friar Giovanni of the Franciscan order. I cannot believe I have spoken with the Holy Father, Papal Vicar, Gregory X, and he has offered me employment at the Vatican."

"Giovanni, where are you, what are you doing?" Beth clamored.

Some time went by as Mark seemed frozen in thought, his eyes glassed over. Beth began to worry if she took him too deep and thought she needed to awaken him, but Marie interfered in her thoughts, and said, "Wait, let this play out, obviously we need to hear this."

Mark began to speak as Giovanni saying these words, "It is as if we are living in some sort of fabricated world, a fantasy, things are not real but appear real."

Beth getting very nervous, "What are you trying to tell me? What is it that you are doing? Where are you?"

It was then Giovanni yelled out with this horrific cry, "MY GOD what is this, what is this magical glass. It's... It's a record of our history and future? No! It can alter time..."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

A few more seconds went by and Giovanni continued...

“I am Giovanni of the Franciscan Order.”

Repeating... “I am Friar Giovanni of the Franciscan Order.”

Continuing... “I am MARK, and I from the future...”

Everything and everyone went silent, and Mark uttered these final words.

“They have a technology that supersedes anything I have ever witnessed. Can you imagine if we had this technology?”

Beth then stated, “Mark do you know who you are?”

“Yes, I am Mark, and I am from the future, I only wish I could figure out a way where I could take this technology with me. ‘Back to the Future.’

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(5) The Serpentine's Mirror

As the conversation was near its end, Pope Gregory announced that he must leave, and that Giovanni would be escorted to his quarters, but first he would be given the tour of where he would begin his new quest.

Pope Gregory then picked up the crystal mirror and handed it to Giovanni telling him he was going to need this in his work, and to protect it, honor it, and most of all, keep it confidential.

The Mirror was very cold upon the tips of his fingers, and when Giovanni touched it, it seemed to penetrate through his very being. He then looked down upon the glass, and when he did, he noticed that his portrait and his statistics of where he was born, where he had lived, what his profession had been, and where he was at that very moment, all appeared upon the mirror, as data and statistics that recognized the very core of his being.

It then revealed the date and the time. This alone gave Giovanni a great fright. He knew whatever this was, it did not come from our human domain.

At that time two Vatican guards had come to assist Giovanni and waved at him to follow. They left the papal office and continued down a corridor that led into a separate room, which had a spiral staircase, of which they called, 'the Serpent's tail.'

It was very dark and foreboding and the only light came from the flickering of candles that were placed evenly in distance around the hand rail of the staircase, the rest of the surrounding area appeared as a dark dungeon.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

As they continued down the steps, eventually they made it to the lower floor, which led to another long straight corridor, which then ended abruptly at a final door. This door was also guarded by two heavily armed Vatican Guards.

The two men who silently walked with Giovanni gave way to the two guards at the door, and the guards did not move from their position, they readily noticed that he was carrying the strange mirror, yet it seemed fine with them. They then turned towards the door, as one of the guards opened it, and the other ushered him in with a simple wave of his hand.

I Giovanni then walked into this large room, which had much better lighting, as candles were prolific. The door behind me closed and I turned around to see two more men guarding the opposite side of the door.

Again, both guards looked very closely at the item I was holding, obviously making a mental note, and then they returned into an almost frozen position as they continued as a sentry staring straight forward.

Obviously, no one was getting through these doors without permission, but my question was, what were they guarding? As I began to take a visual look around the room that I had entered, I noticed there were shelves from the floor to the ceiling and all of them had scrolls, ancient parchments, Papyrus rolls, it was a Library of knowledge.

I then noticed along the far wall the words inscribed in large letters revealed, Bibliotheca Apostolica Vaticana. This was some sort of Vatican Library, of which I had never heard anything about, it was very secret, and the knowledge of it certainly did not leave this place.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

And then around the side there was an entrance to another room that had these words upon the top part of the door, Archivum Secretum Apostolicum Vaticanum.

This room caught my attention because it had to do with our religious secret archives. In my mind as a Friar I thought I struck gold, what an opportunity to witness first hand some of the ancient scrolls that I had only heard about or read as if being inserted into ancient works.

The words were daunting, and I knew I was in the most secret and protected room in the entire world. It was then I picked up a scroll from off one of the shelves, and when I began to read it, two monks came over to me and said, "You will have more than enough time to inspect these codices fortune. It is time you were trained on how to use that mirror you are holding."

I then gradually replaced the scroll upon the shelf, and followed the two men into the room of the Apostolic archives. I was more than thrilled to discover my new path in life.

My expectations were all but dimmed when I finally entered the room expecting to see another room filled with ancient documents and parchments and papyrus scrolls, but instead I saw none of that.

What I did behold was a very large round table where twelve large chairs were positioned all around, each chair was positioned at the table and each had the same type of mirror in front of the chairs, except one.

In the middle of the table was a much larger replica of the same mirror sitting on top of a serpent-carved stand. The stand had four carved 'EYES' peering in all directions, as if it was watching everyone.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

I was then motioned to sit down on the chair at the table that was missing a person and a mirror. I then placed the mirror that I had been holding in front of me like all the rest, completing all twelve mirrors.

It was then the other Monks who were sitting in the other eleven chairs surrounding the table, acknowledged my presence with a slight smile and a nod, they then returned to what they had been doing prior to my entering, yet a not a word was spoken.

There were eleven other monks sitting at the table, and I seemed to be the only Friar from the Franciscan Order. The others were of other orders and clans.

It was then I was given an vacant scroll, I was told to take up the writing instrument in front of me, which was setting upon the table next to a vial of black ink, and to begin to copy the contents that I see coming from the mirror onto the empty scroll.

Of course, I could not understand what it was we were doing, until suddenly writing appeared on the mirrored glass, and then I began to reason it through.

It was from an ancient scroll named Isaiah, chapter 10. I have heard of these scrolls through word of mouth and much of our faith is based on these hidden relics, but I have never seen one to confirm their reality. However, I wondered, "What is this mirror? Why are we copying from this mirror onto blank scrolls?"

As a friar we spoke often about the words of Christ and the ancient documents that formed our beliefs, and I instructed from these scrolls often, even without ever seeing them with my own eyes.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Everything was by word of mouth, or via other authors, who claimed to have witnessed these precious works, or from what the church had declared.

Very few had ever seen an original, often we had copies of certain books, but to see an original was glorious. However, the question I have is, how does this strange looking glass have this material scribed within? Where does it really come from?

Strange as it may seem, my job was to copy what had appeared magically upon the mirror. It was not written in ink, or anything I have ever seen before. The writing was the appearance of a liquid, and it appeared to move in waves like an ocean, as if it was elusive, or changeable. And I stress the term changeable, as if it could instantly change to something else entirely. Very odd indeed.

When I peered into this special glass, I saw entire segments change before my eyes, but it happened so quickly I had no time to read it, and then it simply settled into the words that I was to copy. It was as if there were various other revelations unfolding as if nothing was set in stone.

I enquired of one of the monks sitting next to me, as I was giving much praise for being one of the chosen ones in this illustrious work, "Why has the Lord granted us direct knowledge of the ancient wisdom?"

The Monk responded in a whisper, "For it to never be lost, our Lord uses this mirror to teach us what the ancient writs had stored."

I then being vastly inquisitive queried with a tone that evidently was a tad too high due to the unfriendly stares I received from the

Time-loop Chronicles 3

others, “Is this how the knowledge of the ancients was restored, via this mirror?”

It was then I was told, again with a shush and a whisper, “This mirror is not reflecting the past, it is reflecting the future.”

Repeating curiously what the Monk has just stated, “The future?”

“Yes, in the future a certain book called, ‘the Biblios’ will retain all this information, your job is to make sure that you copy this information correctly, so it will be available for the future aspirants.”

Obviously confused and a little agitated, Friar Giovanni responded, “Pardon me, I do not understand, in the future there will be a book called, ‘the Books’, and in it these will be sacred scrolls from our past, but somehow, they are from our future?”

Forgive my impertinence, if it is from our future then why are we writing it all down so that it can become available for those in the future, if they already have this knowledge?”

An elderly Monk from across the table that had the appearance, as one being a leader, as his clothing and chair seemed oddly unique, began to speak with authority. “Friar, it is not for us to question these things my son, we do as we are instructed, as you must also do.”

Giovanni not taking heed to the warning said, “You do not know why this comes from the future and, yet we still must copy it to make sure it passes unto the future, yet it is supposedly; from the past?”

Obviously, Giovanni had a huge conundrum to battle with that was making his new-found employment difficult to process. Finally, the Monk sitting closest to Giovanni began to speak directly into his ear,

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Let me reveal a mystery unto you that you must not share with anyone else beyond this place.”

Even though the words from the Monk sitting closest to Giovanni had come in a whisper, which was being shared ever so quietly, at that moment, all eyes lifted from those sitting around the table, from those who had been visibly busy and very attached to their work.

They all immediately stopped what they were doing and stared directly at the Monk who apparently was ready to reveal the hidden secret of the ages. It was more than a little obvious that none of them were optimistic that this conversation should continue down this path, however, the Monk went about to explain anyway.

“The words we copy come from our future, which is within a single time event. It is then passed back to us to copy it to make sure it remains for a new time event. Do you understand?”

“I am confused by what you are revealing... knowledge coming from a single time event of the future is given to us through this glass, and we are to make sure it remains the same, yet it is for a new time event? Is this what you are trying to tell me?”

“My Friar, this knowledge really does come from the past, as you saw in the room next door, those are all ancient documents from historical archives and records. As those documents have passed through unto the future they were interpreted, revised, brought forth into a myriad of languages, and thus the Biblios was finally created.”

“Why did they need to be interpreted, revised and changed into other languages?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The Monk Continued, “As you might have ascertained while looking upon one of the documents, that none of them are complete due to their antiquity.

Much is missing or distorted and even unrecognizable through various languages of the past, so it was not practical or possible with our limited ability, to reconstruct them. However, in the future they will have sciences that far outdate our limited knowledge, and they will be able to reconstruct these ancient codices.”

“So, the Biblio, becomes the Biblios, meaning many books into one book. Is this because there are multiple books of the same book that will be copied for future reference?”

“Yes and no, the Biblios will have many books, as you copy Isaiah, there are many documents in the back that will be added, Isaiah was only one, in time the Biblio will be Biblios, because it has many books within the one.

However, not to be contrary, it also means multiple copies of the same book of books will be available for future use, not only in one language, but many different languages.

You must understand, we do not only copy the events past and present that will eventually become the Biblios, we also copy all texts, of various religions, science, history and even medical. Anything you can imagine all begins here. And through this special mirror, it is our job as being among the twelve, to copy the codices of the ancient text from the Mirror. Each monk has their own tasks and field to work within.”

“I still do not understand, if this comes from the future it is already written, it is already complete, so why do we need to rewrite what is already written? And I am not sure what you mean about time,

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

this or that time. Does time as we know it come to an end in the future and then start again in the past, creating a new time event?"

"Yes, time as we know it from our point of view ends at a specific period in the future, everything comes to an end and begins again prior to our time. We simply keep the loop going."

"The Loop?"

Giovanni obviously having trouble dealing with this new information, continues, "Our world ends and begins again? This sounds more like a pagan myth. I am having a difficult time trying to appreciate how this information is of our historical past when it comes from our future."

"Originally, my son, it all began from the past, which led unto our future, but once that happened there was no need to follow that process ever again. A long time ago the Monks copied everything from the ancient scrolls and passed it down unto their generations to follow and to continue the path of revealing this ancient treasures.

However, this was too tedious, and often great mistakes were made that had to be changed at later date. Many of the mistakes were rectified in the future, therefore, there is no need to follow that process ever again.

And most importantly, the knowledge changes as we go deeper into the future. In the future the Lord must allow changes in his word to fit a new world, therefore changes occurred and were adapted into a new understanding."

"Are you saying some in the future will change the truth of the past?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Understand Friar, the Lord said, ‘whatsoever we bind on Earth, shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever shall be loosened on Earth shall be loosened in heaven.’ He obviously allowed for future changes.”

“How does the truth change?”

“Truth is likened unto the liquid that forms inside the mirror, it comes in waves and disperses, but it can also change if the world around changes.”

“You are saying then that our past is really our future?”

“I guess one could say that, and yet our future could also be called our past.”

From across the table the Monk who responded earlier, spoke up again, this time with a little anger and frustration in his tone, “Begin your work my son, all questions will be answered as you continue to learn.”

I then began to very carefully copy Isaiah 10 from the mirror of the Future, upon the scroll I was given, after I completed the chapter, the Papyrus scroll was then taken by a courier who then took the finished product into another adjacent room.

There I was told, it would be compartmentalized into a codex, and added to the rest of the books within that section, so that later it could be added into the Bible.

“I just created the future, or should I say the past, oh my, it is so confusing.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Thereby, since I completed Isaiah 10, it will be added to the last scroll, Isaiah 9, which the former monk before me had finished, which was also added into the scroll of Isaiah.”

Giovanni sat there awaiting the next scroll of Isaiah 11, he then began to get dizzy. It was more than obvious he was starting to lose consciousness.

He didn't know what was happening. He began to slowly fade away when suddenly his head dropped to the table, and the rest of the monks having a concerned look upon their faces gazed upon Giovanni wondering if he had become ill.

Within a few moments, Giovanni raised his head again, and he sat there staring at the Mirror while watching what everyone was doing for a short space of time, when he said, “My GOD what is this, what is this magical glass. It's... It's a record of our history and future, it can change events in time...”

Mark was peering through the eyes of Giovanni and when he did, Giovanni's fingers touched the mirror again, and it began to relate intimate details about this new internal persona.

The Monks oblivious to what was happening in the mirror in front of Giovanni became visibly concerned. Giovanni was acting rather strangely, and they were beginning to wonder if the choice to allow Giovanni to become the 12th worker had been properly authorized.

Then Giovanni spoke again, “I am Giovanni of the Franciscan Order.”

Again, he repeated, “I am Friar Giovanni of the Franciscan Order.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

And then suddenly a transformation had occurred, and then he spoke in a strange language. Touching the mirror activated his awareness of who he was and what he was doing along with the blending of the mind of Giovanni.

“I am MARK, and I from the future...”

The monks were paralyzed in silence, and with a release of an awe of wonder from their mouths, Mark was about to utter some words out loud that he was mentally preparing to apprehend this mirror to learn more about it and even try to find a way to bring it home with him. He then realized that he must keep his guard as to where he is and what he is doing.

When he peered around the large table seeing these strange clad people looking at him like he was the devil. Mark realized that somewhere in a past life he was part of a group that functioned in some sort of odd spiritual or even technological work.

He was not sure what was happening, but he realized, he must not give himself away. Mark then tried to reaffirm that everything was fine and then went on to say, “Don’t worry about me, this is just all really strange to me. I will get used to it in time.”

The other monks not knowing exactly what to say, wondering what strange language Giovanni was speaking, and murmurs were present wondering if a devil had taken him over?

Yet it was not for them to judge this situation, they believed Pope Gregory must have confirmed Giovanni to be the next Serpentine Mirror associate, so they simply went back to their work and ignored Giovanni, and some even thought they were being tested to assure their loyalty.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

It was then that a courier handed Giovanni a new blank scroll, which had been rolled up and when he unrolled it, Mark noticed that there was no writing upon it. It was then the strange glass in front of him began to show words, words that appeared like liquid.

At first, he didn't understand the language, until he touched the screen again, as soon as he did, the mirror recognized who he was in the future.

Mark still being unsure how that transpired, as the mirror began to relate information about him, where he was from, even his facial recognition, finger prints, everything, including his eye scan. A technology that he had never witnessed before even from the future, except maybe from movies he had watched.

It revealed that Mark was existing in 1273 AD and it 2017 AD.

It had all knowledge about him, and as soon as it recognized who he really was even though Mark had taken over Giovanni's body, it was able to recognize him at the soul level.

And then like Magic, the writing was instantly transformed into English. It was then Mark saw Isaiah 11. And wondered why a Biblical chapter had been given to him on this mirrored screen.

As he looked around the room he noticed all the monks were looking upon the mirror and copying its contents upon their scrolls. When they finished, they gave the completed scroll to a courier who then left the room with it in his hands and returned with a blank scroll to wait for another completed scroll that had been filled.

Mark began to wonder, "My god are we creating the Bible directly from this Mirror? What is this magical mirror? Who gives it the

Time-loop Chronicles 3

authority?” All these questions roamed through Mark’s mind as he tried to grasp the true portent of this strange and eerie glass.

Mark realized that he was transcribing the Bible for the future. It was then he began to copy Isaiah 11 on to the scroll from what was on the mirror, as the Mirror revealed the content in both languages side by side, the English language and Latin.

Seeing it in English allowed Mark to understand what it was he was copying. After he had finished, he was just about to give the scroll to the courier like everyone else had done, however, he decided to hold on to it for a little longer.

That is when Mark began to fade away, he became dizzy and light headed, as Mark faded away Giovanni returned, and then Mark returned. It was as if they were both bouncing in and out of time. Finally Mark once again regained his new conscious awareness, living and operating in a medieval past.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(6) The Mind-Meld and the Theft

Mark was seriously contemplating about stealing the mirror. He kept thinking, this needs to be known, our entire history may be a lie, but how can I inform anyone of this? I must steal this mirror and bring it back with me, and that is when it hit Mark, wait, I don't exist in this time, there is no way to bring the mirror back to my time.

Mark continued with the work acting like he was still copying from the mirror, but was thinking more about how he could bring this mirror into the future.

Suddenly, as he was reading what he had wrote as the first verse of Isaiah 11 it gave him the answer to the riddle. It said, 'And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots:'

When he read where it stated, a branch shall grow out of his roots, the answer hit him, I need to find a place to bury this mirror, a secure place, like a tree that lives for hundreds of years.

I need to find a place that will never be trodden upon into the future. And then when I return from this period, I must travel to this area and locate this place and dig it back up as if seeking through the roots of a tree within the ground.

He wondered though, just where am I, and where could I bury this magical device.

Mark was so excited that he figured out how he might possibly pull this off, his elation was vibrating around the room and the others were feeling uncomfortable. He then decided he best 'tone it down', words that echoed through his mind.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark then looked back on the scroll where he had written the first chapter and said, “OH NO!”

Evidently Beth heard his anguish, as she had not heard much coming from his lips since the regression began, and she wondered if something had gone wrong.

Beth had then awakened Mark, and he was very angry, He said, “Why did you awaken me, I need to do something?”

She said, “Because you screamed out with the words, ‘Oh No!’ I really thought you were in trouble.”

Mark explains, “The reason I screamed out was because I was copying the Bible onto a scroll from the magic mirror and I realized I was writing it in English, and that would be a red flag to those in the room.”

Beth looking horribly confused said, “What?”

“Beth, please put me back under, and direct me back, I can’t explain it all now, but I need to get back for the security of our entire planet. It is that important.”

Not understanding what Mark was talking about, for some reason, she could not hear much of what was happening to Mark during the regression, and what was occurring in the past, even though she kept asking him questions like, where are you? Who are you?

There had been no response. It is as if he was buried inside a trance. When she finally heard him yell, ‘Oh No.’ she thought he was in trouble and quickly awakened him.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Mark was truly troubled, he said, "I have gone back in time and entered a past life of some sort of monk, or someone like that, and I am copying the Bible from this magical mirror looking thing. And I guess that is how our Bible was eventually created, and evidently it goes way beyond the Bible into a myriad of beliefs and theories."

Beth not having a clue what he was talking about, said, "I might have a method where I can send you back into the past, but be conscious enough to reveal what is occurring so that we can record your journey."

Mark queried, "What does that mean?"

"I may be able to enter your consciousness at a super deep level so that you can become the individual of your past life, this way you can speak and even write the language, you can become him, but still be totally aware of who you are, it is a 'him' right?"

Marie began to laugh.

"Yeah I was a guy back then too." (they all chuckled) "Yea Beth that would be perfect, absolutely genius in fact, I have got to return. I did become aware of who I was when I touched the mirror."

Beth continuing, "Whatever... I am not saying it will work, but I may be able to bring you down deep enough into your subconsciousness and then your super consciousness can transpose who you are and blend the two of you together, like Spock doing a mind meld."

"Fantastic, I am ready Beth, if you can do that it will be perfect."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Marie then standing by had wondered saying, “Is this a wise thing to do.” Mark told Marie, “Listen, what I discovered is beyond anything you can imagine, it may answer this loop thingy my dream-dad was speaking about... I am sure if it was you that you would be doing the same thing I want to do.”

Beth then chimed in...

“Before I get started, I want to know what is this magical mirror you are talking about, and what does it have to do with the Bible?”

“Beth, if we do this correct, you will be holding it in your hands in due time.”

“Wait a minute Mark, I can do a lot of things via regression, but I cannot manipulate objects from one time to another.”

“Don’t worry, you won’t have to, just put me under again, and let’s pray I return to exactly where I had been., And by the way, no matter what you hear or don’t hear, do not, I repeat, do not awaken me, let me return when I am ready.

Time there will not match time here, whereas I could be gone for an hour during the regression, it may be weeks that go by that I experience this other life.”

Beth being a little apprehensive and not quite agreeing with what Mark just said, as her face twitched, it spoke mountains of words without saying anything, she began the regression again anyway, starting with her countdown, this time with a few twists of her wording. Instead of considering this as your past life, she kept saying, you will now become the avatar Monk of this other life.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Within a few minutes, Mark returned to the Giovanni consciousness of who he had been, he then knew everything about himself, and at the same time, was also Giovanni from the past. The two in fact blended into one, yet keeping both memories, side by side.

Now realizing that he had been Friar Giovanni, he also retained all Giovanni's memories, something unexpected. He then understood what it was they were doing; however, the most important part was he retained the memory of Giovanni having the Mirror when he came in and the guards at the doors saw him with it.

He then began to ponder, what would they do if I walked out the same way that I had walked in, holding the mirror in my hands? Would they even care?

Mark then realizing he was inside the Vatican Library began his plan for subterfuge to steal the mirror and escape from the Vatican, and find a place to bury this mirror.

The problem was he was feeling resistance from Giovanni from within. Giovanni began to understand who Mark was, that he was from the future, and he also wondered to himself if this mirror brought out someone from the future back to the past. It was all so strange.

Mark then replying to the soul-mind of Giovanni simply said, "You have what is called the Serpentine's Mirror and you cannot figure out whether it is benevolent or malevolent? You would think the name itself would resolve that issue."

Serpents were not always something of a negative cast, sometimes they were used for wisdom and knowledge. Yet even so, why call it the Serpentine's Mirror, why not Christ's mirror, or the Lords mirror. It just seems a tad too fishy to name this thing "The

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Serpentine's Mirror." And it is basically involved with changing the Biblical scriptures.

Strangely enough Giovanni within was beginning to understand and feeling the same thoughts in his own language and culture. Deep down Giovanni knew something was rather malevolent concerning this mirror.

It was then the two of them used their mind-meld and they decided to use their brain trust to escape the Vatican toting along this infamous relic. I then asked Giovanni within, "Do we have any breaks here, is there like a lunch break or do we just work all hours of the day."

Giovanni said, "I am new, I do not know the protocols yet. Maybe we should call over to one of the monks and ask if there are rest periods.

They agreed to ask one of their co-workers and Mark was stunned as he heard the voice come out of his mouth and it was speaking Latin, and then in return when the Monk's spoke he understood the language of the other Monks, like it was his first language. It was quite startling.

One of the Monks told him, "We are coming upon a break shortly. We are given one hour to relax at a different location, often we take the time to read some of the scrolls in the Library, some of us choose to leave the location and return to the halls of the Vatican where we can speak to the Cardinals or maybe even take a walk outside, but everyone must leave the room. Not even a courier can remain. Everyone must leave.

When Mark heard they could go back outside, that was music to his ears, because that is exactly what he intended to do.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

As the moment had approached they were then informed that it was time to leave. Mark then stood up and slowly appeared to be gathering some things or replacing it into a more organized order, while the other Monks were leaving, Mark delayed for as long as he could.

He then picked up the mirror and held it in his hands acting like nothing was wrong, He felt if he was caught, he would just say, 'I didn't realize we couldn't remove the mirror.' He knew though that none of the other Monks took their mirror, everyone left their mirror where it had been.

And he also realized that the other Monks that remained inside the Library must not see him with the mirror, because that would end their little subterfuge. So, he kept it hidden long enough under Giovanni's cloak until he approached the exit door where the two guards were standing, and then he revealed the content.

Again, as before they looked at him and then looked upon the mirror as they did prior. And without even thinking they opened the door behind them, and ushered out Giovanni. When Giovanni saw the other two guards standing on the opposite side, he began to slowly walk past them until one of them said, Stop...

At that point, Mark thought the jig was up. However, the only thing the two guards were concerned about was what was Giovanni holding since they didn't see it. When they recognized it was the same mirror that they had seen him come in with earlier, one of the guards said, "What is that strange thing in your hands? We have seen it from others, but no one has informed us about it.

The mind of Mark then immediately jumped in to offer an explanation, "It is a Vatican secret from our Holy Father, the Pope, and we cannot speak of it, lest there be serious repercussions."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The guards obviously not trained to know anything about this mirror waved them on not wanting to bring down punishment upon them. Giovanni then whispered for Marks benefit, and said, “Now that was quite cunning.”

Mark then placed the mirror inside his robe, while walking up the spiral staircase.

It was too good to be true, Giovanni held the hidden Mirror under his cloak while walking down the hallways and briskly he walked by everyone there, and was able to walk right out of the main gate, and leave Vatican City.

He couldn't believe it, it was too easy. Something of this import being stolen seemed way too simple to pull off with such ease, but luck was not to shine on them for long.

Several shofars began to blare inside the Vatican walls sending an alarm far and wide. Gates were being shut, guards were surrounding anyone inside the Vatican, and sealing everyone off from the exit to the gates, as they were all being monitored, stopped and even placed under arrest. And in Latin were the words being shouted at high levels, ‘THIEF, THIEF.’

The Vatican was sealed up like a drum, no one could even envision the fact that Giovanni was already outside the walls of the city. Yet he knew time was short, that sooner or later they would realize the Mirror had left the Vatican complex completely.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(7) The Revelation

Thomas Aquinas was running as fast as he could through the hallways of the Vatican, not stopping to speak to anyone; including some top Cardinals that were gathered in somewhat of a somber position.

As Thomas made it to the Papal office, he was asked to close the door behind him. Pope Gregory came out from behind a black curtain, and both looked at each other with shock and dismay.

It was then a booming voice was heard as if sounding like it came from everywhere inside the room. Thomas realized that Gregory was acting strange near that black draped curtain that he had just exited, and it was from behind this curtain where Thomas ascertained where the voice had been coming from, and the strange orator continued to bellow out.

There was no visual contact, but it was obvious whoever this entity was, it had great authority. As the two of them stood there somewhat perplexed, the voice then revealed in an accusatory fashion, **“Do you know what you have done?”**

Obviously, the query was in direct relation to the theft of the Serpentine's Mirror, and Gregory responded by sharing little blame as to why Giovanni was selected, saying, “Lord, I was deceived and mislead, I was told that this adherent was examined properly, and was deemed sufficient for the task.”

Thomas realizing that he was basically being thrown to the wolves responded in like, but still very hesitant of whom he was about to converse with. Yet he fell in line behind Gregory as to the importance of this entity, he then uttered, “Lord, I ask for mercy, I didn't realize that

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Giovanni would betray us, there was nothing which could have revealed this type of betrayal was even within his demeanor.

The voice became deeper in tone yet controlled, and went on to inform them that, "This man Giovanni did not betray you, it was his counter."

Pope Gregory looking back at Thomas and then twitched a little as you could see his brows raised and his manner was troubled while trying to understand, he asked probingly, "His Counter... my Lord?"

"You have unleashed a paradox that could destroy our order, it will unveil itself in the end days. We had all of this under control, now we must regulate the damage by using it to our benefit. However, what you have done is so damning, I have no choice but to make an example of you both."

As Thomas and Gregory once again caught each other's attention, you could surmise great fear and trembling coming from within their bodies. The voice continued...

"From this date forward, I give you, Gregory, the least of the punishment, you will succumb to great pain and although your reign was to last for 24-years, I will remove 20-years from your reign, and you will die in January in severe pain in 1276, at the age of 66, only after serving 4-years. However, you will retain your stature within the church and will be recognized in the future as a Great Pontiff, although very short lived."

Pope Gregory reluctantly said with his eyes drooping down, "Yes, my Lord."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"Now for you, Thomas Aquinas, you have made a great judgment in error, and that error must be rectified. Therefore, you shall soon meet your demise. Your metaphysics got in the way of sound judgment, and because of this, you shall heretofore be punished...

You shall not see your 50th year, instead you shall befall to a blow on the head teaching you that you did not use your head constructively."

Thomas realizing that his life was going to be cut short prematurely and rather quickly, he demanded to know, "What did I do wrong? If Giovanni was not the problem, yet it was some invisible 'counter' as you proclaimed, where is my error?"

The response was rapid, and to the point and with booming clarity, "You dare challenge my authority and decision?"

Gregory clearing his throat opening his eyes as wide as they could towards Thomas, Gregory shook his head back and forth to remind Thomas, "Do not challenge this entity, it will not end well."

The voice from behind the black curtain continued, "Don't you understand Gregory that Thomas has always challenged all the conventional ideologies, that is why you were so enamored by him. However, his knowledge could not peer through this enigma and therefore there is no reprieve."

"Peer through?" Thomas being inquisitive.

"Yes, peer through, if you could have seen the outcome then this action would have never occurred, and my mirror would still be in protected hands. Now I must seek out and find this thief, and end him."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(8) On the Lamb

By the time Giovanni had fled the Vatican he already knew exactly where he was heading. He followed the road to Ostia Antica, which was Southwest towards the sea. Ostia was mostly abandoned, however, there were some fishing vessels that often came to land or went out to sea in this region.

Friar Giovanni already understood about this mode of transportation, he knew being a Friar he could probably board a fishing vessel if he was willing to help and offer something for trade.

After leaving the Vatican he found a place where he met a traveling group which allowed Giovanni to trade for a Donkey so that he could expedite the journey. He traded a medallion he had from his Franciscan order, it was thought to be a lucky charm.

After he had acquired the donkey he was hoping that he could find a vessel of fishermen on a journey to large Island of Corsica, and head to the Northern region of the Corsican Island near Marina di Cordo.

However, for a fishing vessel this would be quite difficult, as they often traveled the Western Coast of Italy and followed the fishing route that remained close to the shore. Anything outside usually needed larger vessels to travel across the great sea.

The problem was, Giovanni was not familiar with some of the Islands that they would need to make stops during this journey. What they didn't expect was, the Serpentine's Mirror was going to be able to direct them.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

As Giovanni's inner traveling companion had become a soul traveler through regression, Mark had an idea, since the Mirror seems to be able to read a location at a soul level, maybe if Giovanni touched it that it will tell them where they are.

Once they had arrived to Ostia Antica, Giovanni then touched the mirror. Amazingly it began to read both Giovanni and Mark's twin connection.

The mirror revealed the area that they had arrived, was called Ostia, with the name Antica missing, as it was revealing the time of Mark's future. It exposed the future names of the same area and revealed their location also during the present event. It was very strange to behold.

When Giovanni touched Ostia, it showed the entire area of both present and future, it became a map. They could see the entire area via a future and present map, and there they decided how they would map this journey.

Once they made it to the sea, Giovanni traded the donkey for some food, water and other items that would help with the voyage. After a few hours talking to the locals, they discovered a four-man small fishing vessel, but they were lacking at least one person. It was then Giovanni needed to convince them to allow him to join with them if they took him to Porto Ercole an island in the Tuscany region.

They figured from there they could sail to Giglio Porto, another island, and then from there they would have a long 50 nautical miles journey to the Marina di Campo across open waters.

And from there they we would travel to Marina di Cordo, which during Mark's time is now called Bastia, on the Island of Corsica, which

Time-loop Chronicles 3

was another good 50 nautical miles. These last two ports were a good distance away, and it would take everything they had to make this journey successfully.

The trick was getting fishermen to take them to these islands, obviously they would need something for trade. It was going to be a difficult journey normally set for larger vessels, but food and water was just the enticement the Ostia fishermen needed to take Giovanni to Porto Ercole.

However, they said, we would travel the Western Coastline of Italia and stop at every port, and Mark and Giovanni understood completely, for the journey was very long, close to a hundred nautical miles; as the future mirror revealed.

Therefore, they would be stopping on shore every ten - twenty nautical miles or thereabouts.

And there we were, we were on board the small vessel heading to our next destination at sea, having stolen the precious bounty.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(9) Vatican Guard is deployed

The Vatican was sealed up tightly, no one could move an inch. The guards were put on high alert to use whatever power was deemed necessary to find this thief and make sure the booty was recovered.

Armed horsemen left the Vatican and a small military cabal coalesced outside the Vatican and were sent in all directions. Pope Gregory was enraged, he along with several Cardinals had a meeting to discuss what exactly happened and who was responsible.

Messenger Couriers along with Vatican soldiers were sent to every church within a 50-mile radius, each one holding a signed-scroll from Gregory, 'that anyone helping or aiding Friar Giovanni of the Franciscan Order would be executed, no questions asked.' It was now a high crime against the Vatican itself and the Holy See.

The tension in the air was thicker than anyone could remember. Obviously, a great crime was committed. Some were speculating, and rumors spread far and wide that the Pope had been assassinated, because no one could remember anything at this level of tension before.

Some even passed along tales, supposedly from a few Cardinals that what happened could destroy the entire church, but none of them elaborated. What everyone in the Vatican soon realized was that Friar Giovanni was an enemy of the church, and persona non-grata.

Giovanni's portrait had been drawn by the Vatican artist who briefly saw him as he went into the Papal office. The Monks then placed the portrait on the Serpent's Mirror and each Monk traced it onto a thin parchment, allowing for many copies to be allocated. And then it was posted everywhere around the city of Roma.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Also, leaders of the guard and military took a copy with them as an assurance in case they run across this adversary of the state.

Several Vatican insiders were beaten, some were even killed because they failed to secure the city. Many of them had no clue what had happened, and they rightfully stated that they did not know about the Friar or his whereabouts.

Most even claimed they never even heard of him before or had even seen him, apparently that didn't matter. Some were tortured so badly, they would never recover, and a few had died from their injuries.

When Gregory had been selected to be the next Pope, it took nearly three years for the process to unfold. It was Gregory who finally created the Vatican conclave where the Cardinals were to be convened in a closed-door summit and had to remain there until they selected the new Pontiff. This process via bickering and argument, which had led into years to select a new Pope was ridiculous. And Gregory had it changed.

This would put an end to long debates that would force the Cardinals into voting for the next Pope in an expedited manner. After Gregory died, the next Pope was selected after just one day in 1276, however, some were so angry by this new method that they decided to suspend the new rules Gregory had put in place.

After another long period where the Cardinals were unable to cast a timely vote, from 1292-1294 during the selection process, the rules that Gregory had ordained were then put back in place, and after a good period of time, where many subtle changes were made, since 1831 no conclave has ever lasted more than a week.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

There was no doubt that Gregory came in and enforced many new rules. He was not someone to play games with. And now with the Giovanni uprising, the Vatican was under great peril, and as one Cardinal who spoke under anonymity stated, "The mysterious missing Serpentine's Mirror is a such a great setback to the Vatican and the world, that not finding it could result in total loss of control, globally."

Few took this news with great fervor, because no one could believe that the mirror was of such great importance. No one understood it except the top level of Vatican insiders.

Remember, the mirror's revelation had been hidden from all eyes and ears, and few if anyone knew about it or what it could do.

Soon we shall learn the mystery of this mirror and why there was such great fear that it was missing and possibly in the wrong hands.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(10) The Journey across the Stormy Sea

As the trip began towards Porto Ercole, everything was perfect, they hit shore a couple of times with no issues. They even caught some fish, which made the trip even more enjoyable.

It is true, they could have traveled by land all the way to Porto Ercole and save Giovanni and Mark this seafaring trip, the problem was, the Vatican Guard was after them, and by land it was too easy to get word by relay, via trumpets, messenger couriers and underground relays that there were travelers of suspicion.

This was a dangerous time as well as they were hip deep inside the Holy Roman Empire that covered most of the land mass around the Mediterranean, and Europe, and whether the Vatican guard could be on the scene or not, there were soldiers stationed in all cities, all under the beck-in-call of either the Pope or the Emperor. There was no real place to hide, therefore, being at sea was the best option.

By sea it would make it nearly impossible for them to be identified via word of mouth or to catch up to them to send out word and then potentially capture the bandit's.

Giovanni and Mark figured, if we were out at sea, even with the mirror, chances were very slim that they could seize us and by the time they figure it out, we would be in Corsica. Giovanni then revealed to Mark within, "We better not use the mirror until we get to Corsica, because the other mirrors can locate where we are."

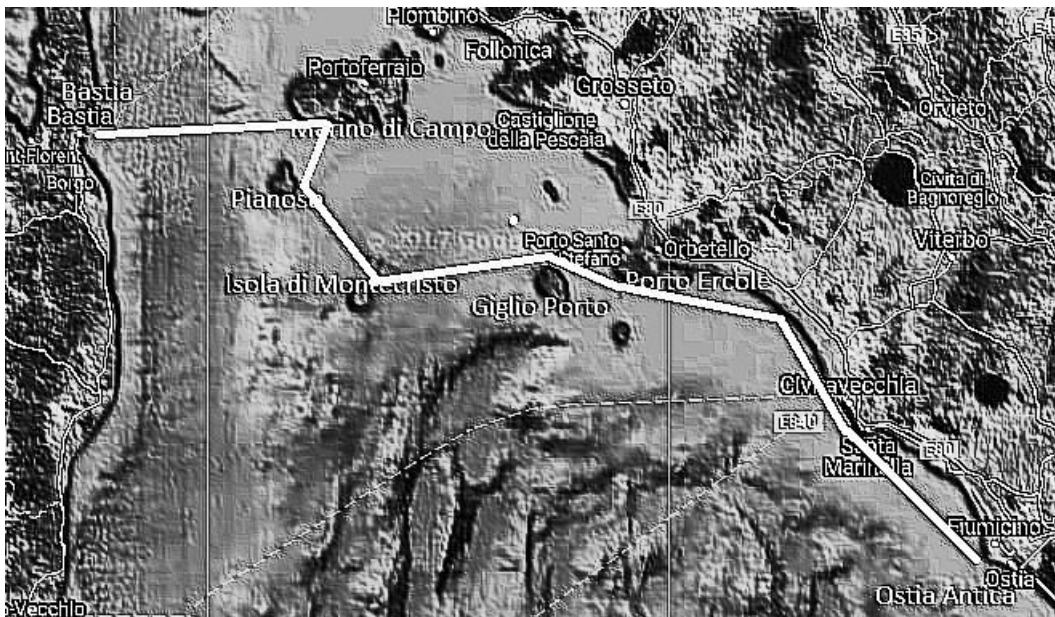
They had learned that the mirror was not activated if human hands did not touch it, so they draped it under a cloth to prevent it

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

from operating. The problem was when they were in Ostia the mirror was activated long enough so the monks could trace the location.

Fortunately, what they saw was both Mark and Giovanni's identities, one being from the general area the other seemingly was from across the ocean. Therefore, they believed the mirror had malfunctioned and they did not alert anyone to its quirkiness.

As we constructed our route we copied it from the mirror.



However, first things first, our initial journey was going to land us East of Freganae, with the stops planned along the way on the Western Coastline via Ladispoli and Santa Marinella. Although the map was combined with both future and past, we selected the map that would best fit our needs for the main ports.

We then continued to head North coming to another stop East of Civitavecchia, and then we embarked on land East of Tarquinia, and finally the last stop off was Montaito di Castro, and then off to sea to Porto Ercole.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Even though we were traveling about 6 knots with the wind blowing North, we were only moving at about 7 nautical miles per hour. We would still have to stay in Porto Ercole before trying to find another fishing vessel that would escort us to our next destination.

It has now been a very grueling day and a half, via a good 36-hours since we left Ostia, and having to make a few of the stopovers hampered our time allotted due to some trading mishaps in our last break.

Along the way to Porto Ercole, we had some trouble. Two of the three fishermen we were with tried to swindle a couple of the locals, and it didn't fare well.

We ended up having to flee back to the vessel and sleep through the dark night in very cramped settings, and it was very uncomfortable. We then sailed off at sunrise and unfortunately, we were unable, due to this chicanery of two of our sailing mates to get some necessary staples, like food and water.

Although, we had an overabundance of wine that had been traded for a catch of fish, of which much of our catch during our initial journey was still lingering on board and was starting to stench up the joint. Obviously, the others were used to the smell, Giovanni, however, was not, and Mark made it clear, 'it was pungent.'

Let me say, being on the sea with fishermen, and a tote of several bottles of the worst wine imaginable, having a color of deep black with a horrible bitter taste, along with a foul-smelling stench of fish in the nostrils, was not the best environment one could be in. Giovanni's stomach was rolling like the sea.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Even though the wine lacked character, the alcohol content was strong enough to make three fishermen extremely foolhardy. Even as a Friar who had never touched strong drink, unfortunately, I was outmaneuvered by my soul partner who had no trouble blending in. Mark loved to repeat the phrase, "When in Rome do as the Romans do." Even I had to laugh at that.

There were times I knew we had to be maneuvering in circles, because we didn't seem to go anywhere. Time was moving very slowly, and the hot sun was beginning to dry out three very intoxicated sailors and one inebriated Friar. Fortuitously, we finally did make it to Porto Ercole about 10 PM the next evening.

I thanked the fishermen for their help, we really didn't talk much, I remember one of them named Guido was a happy fellow, he would often make fun of my attire, saying it was a bit much for the hot sun especially being on the sea. I did have to remove a few layers of clothing during our journey. The other two were not as friendly, much more guarded, and few words were spoken between us.

I met a friendly religious man and woman right on the shore in Porto Ercole, their names were Jovan and Anna, they had been finishing up some work as they were involved in trade with the fishermen as they came ashore.

They had a large family of seven, three girls and two boys, as Anna was prone to speak about them often. And they were more than happy to allow me to stay the night in their tiny quarters.

As a Friar, it does indeed help at times for those who feel that they will be blessed to give aid to a soldier of Christ. I don't think they were expecting one so 'blitzed' as Mark informed me of this strange word. In fact. often the words I was speaking were from Mark's time, I

Time-loop Chronicles 3

had to laugh at the usage of such words, but in time they seemed succinct to me.

From my early tutelage, I was granted greater study in the usage of Latin terms, and it helped me recognize some of the terms Mark was using from his Language in parallel to my own.

We seemed to blend together nicely, although some of Mark's terms were not used by most in my day, due to a lack of education and vast difference in terminology, I had read many ancient texts where I learned much about vocabulary and language diversity.

I had studied greatly into the scripture that had been referenced by other books, before the Bible would ever come into existence, such as, 'The Four Books of Sentences,' which is a book of theology written by Peter Lombard. Where he had placed some ancient scriptures within his writings.

Although many varied languages of scripture like, Greek and Latin and even Hebrew existed within works, none of them could be verified as authentic. I had to wonder could the mirror have created all this and instituted it into the past as if being authentic.

Mark contended that he learned a little of this history in school; and he stated that this information came from the Roman Latin Vulgate via the Catholic Church. It was said many of the scriptures from earlier times came from the accepted Vulgate.

He then said, but there is a major discrepancy in that the Vulgate never really turned up until the 16th century, and yet it was told to those of the future it existed since the 4th century. That just seems rather odd like something was used to backtrack information into an earlier time. "Could it be the Mirror..." Mark wondered also?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Giovanni continued... "Whether or not it was authentic, helped me have a greater awareness of the diversity of languages in general and how they all seem to support each other.

After getting a few hours of needed sleep, I knew we must not waste time before we searched out for a new sea faring vessel, as the last crew was nowhere to be found.

We were greeted by Jovan and Anna early in the morning, with fruit and bread and they even gave us extra for our next stage of the trip. They said, "Please take this, it will also come in handy for trade."

I realize I often use the plural 'we' but after awhile it is hard to see yourself on a personal level when one is joining in via the background of your mind.

Our destination was Giglio Porto, and then past two more islands and on to Marina di Campo. This would be dangerous as there would be no visible land after we leave Giglio Porto. We could not travel by the Western shore anymore, now we would be out in the deep waters with no land in sight, fortunately the two islands were nearby.

We finally did meet up with some other fishermen, who were more prone to go deeper into the sea, they had a much larger vessel, one made from China, longer and wider with a large sail.

It could sail the sea at greater speeds. The ship was called the, 'Junk.' It was a large sailing vessel mostly used for trade. I then procured my position on the ship with little barter.

In no time at all we were already embarking on the shores of the Island Giglio Porto, this was a normal stop for the trading ship and its

Time-loop Chronicles 3

crew. After spending a very little time talking to some of the other crews of various fishing vessels, it was now time to continue.

We then sailed more towards the West about 25 nautical miles to another Island on the route called, Isola di Montecristo, after stopping there a couple of hours taking in some of the views, we then journeyed more North towards the Island of Pianoso, which was another 20 nautical miles.

And then finally the last leg of this journey to Marina di Campo traveling 10 nautical miles towards the North East, we finally embarked at our key destination before the long trip to Bastia.

Unlike the previous part of our journey this one was much more comfortable, and I would say, we made it to our destination in less than 10-hours including the Island stopovers.

During the journey; I would speak to our benefactors often discussing topics like religion, science, even sailing, and it seemed more like this group were pirates than fishermen.

Although friendly enough, one could be warned, 'do not get in their way when they were determined to get what they want.' On the ship, they had a lot of goods and items for trade, and not a whole lot to do with fishing. As well as cache of weapons, and they all seem to handle them with great skill.

As we were talking to one another, one of the men asked me where I was now headed, I told them I am trying to get to Corsica to the town of Marina di Cordo. I then learned that they were also going that way and I would be granted admittance to continue with them.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

That was music to my ears, that way I would not have to find a new vessel and crew to finish the journey nor figure out what we could use to trade.

We ended up making quarters on the ship again that night before sailing in the morning. It was going to be a very dangerous leg of the journey about 45-50 nautical miles over open sea until our journey's end. However, that seemed very doable since the expedition up until this point had been somewhat uneventful and the weather and wind have been very compliant.

It was then I took the time trying to decide where I would hide the Mirror. It made sense to both Mark and I that we should find a place on the Island of Corsica.

I still wasn't sure what good it was going to do hiding this mirror, but Mark assured me in the future it will be necessary to dig up this relic and reveal it to the world proving our history had been 'fudged,' as Mark put it.

As we embarked upon the sea one more time on the final leg of the journey, it was quite humdrum for a few hours, but suddenly a dark cloud peered out of the East, behind us, and it began to spread and move rapidly, as if it was chasing us down like a rabid animal.

The greatest fear for sea going operations is that the weather could change in a heartbeat. And the last place you would want to be is on the sea with no land in sight.

I felt a strong sense of foreboding, as the other faces of our fellow sailors told an unspoken story of sea faring tragedies, revealing that things at this point were ominous. The wind began to howl, and with

Time-loop Chronicles 3

every burst of wind we were praying that we could outrun the menacing storm, which sadly was now directly upon us.

We were too far out to sea to return, plus a return towards Marina di Campo would take us right into the heart of the storm. And looking forward we were not close enough to our destination to make us feel any more comfortable. We were in the middle of raging waves with no land in sight. And the fear was escalating.

The other men began to wonder if they had picked up a Jonah, as they considered why I was talking to myself. Obviously, I was speaking to Mark as I have done the entire journey, and I am sure they must have thought that they picked up a crazy loon, and of course they were spooked, to say the least.

Mark and I were wondering if we had made a mistake, and we asked ourselves, 'was this our punishment for stealing the mirror.'

It is then when a person discovers in the worst of all ways, what they are really made of, courage or cowardice. The wind continued to howl louder and then it began to rain as if Noah was near-by finishing up his legacy.

The storm was now directly upon us, and the waves were crashing upon the ship's hull, like an axe chopping through wood. The men did everything in their power to stay afloat, they took down the sail as fast as they could, but the waves were too high, and several men had already been cast overboard, while I was hanging on for my dear life.

Sadly, the ship overturned. I struggled with all my ability to hold on to the Mirror which was wrapped in cloth, and at the same time trying to hold on to what was left of the sunken vessel, which had by now broken into various pieces.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

The problem was, the part I was hanging on to was not sea worthy; it had structural holes in the wood which was above the water-line, and was perilously getting ready to sink into the depths of the sea along with everything else. By that time, I would have nothing to hold on to.

I could not find the other men now, they had disappeared somewhere out at sea. I kept hearing this strange sound and finally figured it out that it was some sort of glass bottles evidently bartered in trade and they were clanging together in the water. The waves were crashing so hard and the rain pelting down, I could not see beyond my stretched hand.

The wind was howling to where I would swear that I heard a voice, a voice that sounded like it was saying, "You think you could steal from me..." And then it laughed. I know it seems impossible, but that is what it sounded like, and Mark agreed.

It came to the point where I could no longer stay afloat, as each wave crashed upon me, I was being forced up and then down into the water, drinking what must have been a gallon of the sea. It became nearly impossible to regain my breath to find air, while coughing and choking, every attempt only brought more salty fluid into the lungs.

The remainder of the vessel had finally sunk, and I was trying desperately to stay afloat while holding on to the mirror. Sadly, something had to go, Mark was screaming within my consciousness, saying, "Don't lose the mirror!"

But what could I do, I was not going to survive this storm, one way or the other, we were all headed to the bottom of the sea, along with the infamous Serpentine's Mirror.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

It was then I simply let go and began to sink, everything was fading away. Life was being exterminated. There was nothing I could do. Death was upon me like dirt covering a grave. As I was sinking deeper into the sea I was staring upwards as the light above was fading into darkness.

It was then I beheld a light so bright, it nearly blinded me, and out of the light came the vision of a man, he was smiling, and within my thoughts I could hear the voice saying, “Be not afraid, this is only the beginning of your journey.”

I wondered, is this Mark, but no it couldn't be, the voice was different, who was this? My consciousness then faded to black.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(11) Mark doesn't awaken from his Regression

Beth and Marie were staring at Mark wondering what was happening. It has been an hour and all that he was doing was murmuring to himself without any cogent words.

His body began to tremble, and he erupted into an epileptic fit. Beth tried desperately to awaken him. As Marie was holding him down, Beth was using everything in her knowledge to awaken Mark until his body went silent.

At that moment Mark leaped from the couch, sat straight up and then jumped on to the floor. At the same time, he starts yelling, "I am alive! I'm alive!"

As he stood there making sure that he was still in one piece, a sadness welled up in him when he realized his ancient soul partner whom he had become very close to, must have died. Mark remembered that they drowned in the sea water, and Giovanni must have given up the ghost.

As Mark stood there trying to analyze what had happened, he wondered, due to Giovanni's demise, did he unintentionally change the time line?

Obviously, Giovanni was to go on and live a longer life, and because of what happened, Giovanni's life was cut short and so was his memory for future generations, as well as he would leave behind a most tragic heritage, as a Vatican thief.

What would this do to the time-line, and how would it effect later generations? How was Giovanni connected to it all? Mark realized being a friar chances were slim that he would ever have children, but

Time-loop Chronicles 3

his life could have been used in a great way to achieve a better future or at best a different future than what it appears to have turned out to be.

The frustration grew within Mark as he realized he was monkeying with time itself, but nothing more immense than that of the strange mirror he had witnessed, realizing it was now at the bottom of the sea.

Mark began to wonder deep within himself, could I travel to that area of the world and somehow find a crew to go to the bottom of the sea and recover the mirror. Oh, that thought was a little far out there. It just didn't seem possible.

Finally, Mark began to address his concerns to Beth and Marie when he realized they were not responding to him, he then turned around to ask why they were acting rather aloof, and then the shock of all shocks hit him like a truck, both Beth and Marie were still standing over Mark as he was laying on the couch.

He seemed peaceful enough, almost as if he was not even among the living. Mark, standing outside of his body then wondered what had happened?

He tried calling out Beth's name and then Marie, and neither one could hear him. Marie was sobbing as they both realized something horrible had occurred. Marie was asking Beth, "Are you sure you did everything by the book?"

Beth replied, "Of course not, this was brand new, I was trying to merge both Mark and his past life predecessor together in one mind, I had never done this before, I had only read some journals about it."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Marie kept shouting, "Wake him up! Wake him up!"

Beth replied, "I can't, he is not even listening to me anymore, we are completely disconnected. I never expected this to be the result of this new technique. I have never lost a connection before."

Marie called out again, "Check his blood pressure, is he breathing?"

Beth frantically checked his pulse and put a mirror under his nose to see his breath, and he was breathing, but the pulse was very low.

As Mark was listening to them he tried with great frustration to get their attention, to tell them he was alright, but it was then he realized that being no longer in his human body, he was unable to converse with them, and he began to wonder, "Did I die on the sea nearly 800-years ago, and it somehow affected the regression?"

Was my mind so in tune to the death that occurred then that my body now accepted it as real now?"

Finally, Marie told Beth, "We need to call an ambulance and get someone over here right away." Beth replied, "It could mean the end of my license to practice regression therapy."

Beth was concerned about what this would do to her authorization and occupation, but she also realized this was far greater than to worry about her own ego.

Beth continued to reassure Marie that, "Mark won't die, I know he won't die," but Marie kept saying, "You cannot know that, you didn't know what this unique process might do, it is not the normal procedure of most regressions."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Marie continued, "I know Beth that you are very good at what you do, but right now we need to concern ourselves with Mark and his life, and not your license." Beth finally acquiesced to Marie's logic, and they called for an ambulance.

It was then Mark had remembered in some of his studies about going out of body, and that he could travel beyond this world, even to the afterlife. Mark then said a few words such as, "I am now out of Body and I can travel the 4th dimension realm at will," and within a few seconds, Mark vanished leaving a grieving Beth and Marie to take care of his body, while his soul did some traveling.

While Beth and Marie were waiting for the ambulance there was a knock on the door. Shockingly, it was William, the man Beth had met a while ago. She had remembered she invited him over after she gave William a regression, where he relived being an Abbot back in 1273 in Toulouse France.

She had asked him to come over to meet Marie and her boyfriend Mark. She had completely forgot about it, it was then that she said, "Now I remember what I was forgetting."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(12) Giovanni meets Walter in the Afterlife

Giovanni has died and entered the afterlife. Soon he begins to be drawn into the tunnel of light. There seems to be a battle going on, where there is one who is trying to stop him from entering the light, and the other who demands his soul.

It was then that Walter, the Father of William is revealed, and he is an argument with this entity that is demanding that Giovanni belongs to him. He said, "He stole from me, and I have every right to take his soul-mind where I desire."

Walter replied, "You had him take the mirror, you freely handed it to him, and you are angry that he removed it from the premises?"

"I didn't give him right to steal it."

"Okay let's just say he has borrowed it, it shall be returned and then you can have your precious mirror, back."

"That is not the point, I own his soul, he worked for me, and agreed to do my bidding."

Walter replied, "No, you do not have the right, he did not agree to anything, because he is not really the one who stole from you."

The entity said, "Yes, I know, it was his connection from another time-loop, but that makes no difference, it is the same soul."

Walter said, "Same soul is correct, but you are the ones who gave them different bodies, and that is where the judgment lies."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The entity became very angry and continued to repeat, “But it is the same soul, and I have the right to take him.”

Walter then changed into this bright being of light brighter than any sun, and he said, “You have no right to my family, get behind me Satan.”

Soon Giovanni became aware as to where he was, and he saw this battle concerning his soul occurring, and he was greatly confused. However, it became obvious that this tunnel of light was not a place you want to enter. And at that moment he broke free from the pull.

Walter began to instruct Giovanni as to what had happened and what he will need to do.

“Giovanni my friend, it is once again time to be reminded of the mysteries of the universe. “

“Who are thee my Lord? Your countenance shines greater than the sun.”

“My dearly beloved, you may not understand at first, but in time your soul will merge into one and you will begin to comprehend everything.

I was Mark’s Grandfather, my name during another time was, Walter Keuinedes, I helped Mark’s father William awaken to begin on a trek that would benefit many others. You my friend are also on the path to assist many. For you and Mark are one and the same soul. And I am your Panem Vitae.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Your life as a Friar prepared you for many things s I had revealed unto you long ago, and this was one of those awakening moments to help you understand.”

“My Lord, did thou say you are my Pan...”

Walter interrupting, “Giovanni, I am the Christ, and you are all my inheritance as well as my siblings. Call me friend, for we all equals.”

A confused Giovanni responded, “I was on Earth, and now I am not, I do not understand where I am, but I know this place is not Earth.”

“You have discerned correctly, you are between worlds, you are neither here, nor there, but your spirit is everywhere.”

“The Mirror! The Mirror, what was that?” Giovanni cried out.

“Giovanni, that was the Serpent’s play toy to use to control the earth according to his will. The Mirror is a programmed Supercomputer interface, something you will learn all about. It is a machine that has within it all knowledge of the earth program and beyond, and it regulates what you may call as reality via an illusion.”

Giovanni wondering, “They said it could change events in time, and that time itself comes to an end and begins again. How is this so?”

“It is difficult to explain such things when the mind has been seduced into a sleep. The Mirror is not just a machine, it is the Machine.”

“Excuse me Lord?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“The Mirrors are what operates the entire earth program. The Mirror doesn’t just record events or change them, it is one of the many the programming devices that operate as a back door.”

“Why was it necessary for us to copy from the mirror and then scribe it upon the scrolls? From what you are explaining to me, it appears that we were not required.”

“Exactly Giovanni, your task was meaningless, it just made those who thought they understood, feel important. For the controller of Earth used the mirror to actuate changes.

Try to understand, in the future everyone will know about computers, and how they operate. When one wants to interact with a computer, they do so using interfaces.

The Mirror is the interface connected to the Main frame motherboard, called the Matrix. The matrix or Matrical, is a birthing program that uses souls to interact within an illusion.

That is why the main frame, or the host is called the motherboard. For it is producing fabricated children of the Matrix or Mother. Souls are being transformed from spirit into a CHIP, which will change reality into an illusion.”

“These terms you are using are beyond my ability to reckon, but I do believe I comprehend. The Mirror is linked to another source and that source is where the information is proceeding from.”

“That is somewhat correct my friend, but it is a little more detailed than that.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Wouldn't that mean that when I was writing upon the scrolls, I truly had no real effect within time, it was already in the Mirror or Mother as you have called it?”

“Exactly, in the future no one will have scrolls to determine what it is that they accept or deny. Scrolls were only for those of your time. Even the Bible will not be on scrolls, it will be a book like this one.”

Walter handed the book to Giovanni for him to view the Biblios in its published entirety for the very first time, a book which did not exist during Giovanni's time.

Giovanni immediately stepped up and with great astonishment, and he commented, “This is it, this is what we were copying text for?”

He then thumbed through with his eyes wide open as he would see all the different books, as well as the famed Isaiah. He then looked at Isaiah 10, and said, “Did I do this? Was I the one who wrote this and now it is within the future?”

“Well Giovanni, yes and no, as I stated, it was already there, you simply went through the motions to make it appear that your role in this part was important.”

“My lord...”

Again, Walter objected, “Call me friend or better yet, Brother.”

“Forgive me, however, does the knowledge of this book come from the past or the future? I still do not understand. And since the enemy hath apparently taken this book and has made changes, does this mean that the book is considered of the dark forces?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Let me explain the mystery my beloved friend. That book is the most important and most powerful book in the world, if it wasn’t, do you think the dark ones would even care about it.

The mystery of this book is that it has truth mixed with error. Truth that I brought to this earth once upon a time, and then the Serpent, began to modify it, by adding unto it.

However, he never actually changed it, he purposefully kept the truth within as a diabolical sinister play to cause people to willfully cast away the truth, because they considered the error.

And once you have cast away the truth, you can never access it again in that lifetime. Many will spend lifetimes spinning wheels because they rejected the truth based on the error they had discovered.

The Serpent understood this, he realized that if he could add error, then people would reject the entire book, which played right into his hand. Do you understand why?”

“No, I do not.”

It is because the Serpent was the one responsible for teaching that the Bible or the information within was infallible. He even created his own councils long before your lifetime, such as the Council of Nicaea and so many more to enforce the infallibility of the Bible.”

“I don’t understand, the Bible doesn’t exist in my time, so how did earlier councils speak on something that did not exist yet?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Due to the mirror, they simply reset the clock, or better stated, they reset time and added into the past what it was they wanted for the future?”

“After what I have seen, that makes perfect sense?”

Walter continued, “Now why do you believe there would be such concern over a book if it was invalid? And do you know how the serpent was able to confuse everyone. By using the mirror just like you were doing, in your Council of the Monks.

If the Bible were infallible there cannot be any error. Therefore, he knew with the error that he added within, that once it was discovered there was error, which he will gladly promulgate, then the entirety would be cast out because it would prove that it was not infallible... He wins!”

“What deception!”

“You would not believe how many have done just that, they have tossed it all away because they saw the error and then blindly walked away from the truth. However, for those who believe the infallibility doctrine, they will have the opposite problem, they will accept the blended error also as truth... He Wins again!

Everyone has been conned that have failed to awaken.”

“Is the Bible the only book that has the truth?”

No, there are many that contain the same dilemma, mixing truth with error. However, the Bible is the only book where my words that I brought to this world from the Father are extant, most other works rejected me.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“How would one know the difference? If error is mixed with truth, how shall we choose between? Would this not create great misperception and consternation and bewilderment?”

“That is the secret dear one, all of the true children are encoded to know the truth from within their divine spirit. But the soul has been manipulated to cause them to forget. When the Father awakens them, he does so by connecting to that which was encoded within them, and once they make this connection, they will also recognize the truth.”

“Does this mean the Bible is not needed if the truth is within.”

“My friend, you must have a connection, something must stimulate the awakening. Where would you learn the Word I brought from the Father as the connection? Think about it, what book or writing even teaches ‘My Word,’ except those that have copied it from the Bible?

Comprehend this, I sent my disciples out two by two, to spread the truth to others, however they had to do much more than verbally share it, they had to share it in writing. Writing leaves one a foundation, whereas oral introductions will soon be lost and forgotten.

The Bible is what was left of this enterprise, but the Serpent never understood that because he left the truth in, it still has the same power as if it was completely accurate. And of course, the Father made sure this was the case, whereby he simply used the Serpent’s wisdom against him.

For those of the true nature will see through the error when they are awakened. Yet they will continue to love the truth, but deny the error. They will not be fooled to reject it all because there is error...

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Walter continues... "Let me finish, because haste makes waste... I am saying there are great truths in that volume of books, however, there are also great lies, errors and deceptions. For the enemy, the Serpent, added the error to create confusion.

Giovanni, it is now time that I begin to instruct you on what you shall be doing in your future. The information contained within that book you are holding has great truths, truths I revealed long ago, when I also became human."

"I believe, my brother, that I now understand; that the Bible has the true Word **within**, meaning that it '**has the WORD**,' but it is '**not THEE WORD**'. Just like the true children have the true Word placed **within** them.

If we were to reject the entirety because there is error, then we would have to also be rejected, for we are also souls that have truth mixed with error, **due to confusion**. Therefore, the Biblios is who we all individually are, we are the seed of the word, bodies mixed with truth and error."

"Magnificent, Giovanni, you nailed it. And this is exactly what the Serpent intended. He knew if he could cause us to reject the entirety, then we would also have to be rejected from within. In a sense, they reject themselves never allowing truth to really be absorbed.

Once one rejects the truth in any form, they then reject themselves within where the seed is stored, and they become very confused about everything.

And then total misperception takes over the outer-mind, where one is never sure about anything, never really understanding anything,

Time-loop Chronicles 3

but trying to believe in everything. They are a ship in the sea without a rudder.

What the serpent did not understand, eventually all the true souls will awaken from within and recognize the internal enigma, even if it takes many lifetimes.”

“One thing I am confused about, you said you were William’s father, so does that mean that you came back again? Do you live many lives also?”

“I have never returned as a human being, in that I had to be born again from a biological male and female. However, I do often return to assist and help as you shall also do. I simply appeared as the human called Walter, to finalize the great plan, but I was not human, nor was I within the human, I simply interacted from beyond this world.

Walter was simply a copy of a generational connection. You will learn about this from William in his book long into the future.

This is where you come in, I will begin to teach you the first mystery and you shall begin to write it down on the scrolls of your soul, and then share it to all who are linked with the true family.”

“Me my friend? I am just a lowly Friar, no one would listen to me and I do not have the means or ability to offer this solution.”

“Understand, nothing can stop the work I have created within you. You shall not offer this knowledge in your time, you shall offer it in the end of time. It is now time that you return and do a great work.

It was at that point I said, “I do not want to return, I want to go home with you, please let me go home.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“You may not come home just yet, for what needs to be done is to help others, and without you many things will be lacking, for you hold the key of the code to set my brothers and sisters free. However, I will explain to you what it is that you will do and the importance of it, and then you shall know in your heart that you must return.

Now listen quietly as I begin to teach you the secrets of, ‘The Divine Secret Garden and of the true seeds.’”

Walter began to speak to Giovanni spending a very long time explaining in detail the difference between the lie and the truth, and he taught Giovanni how to separate the two and then to share it with all the divine seeds.

Giovanni was amazed beyond all things. He was mesmerized as he sat there listening and taking about the most powerful information ever bestowed upon the universe.

When Walter had finished, he looked at Giovanni and said these final words...

“Everything I have just taught you, will now fade from memory, what I have spoken here will come back to your soul-memory when the time is right. It is now within your spirit, and during the correct period it will then be translated into your soul and then your human mind will access it.

It is time now to return and fear not, yet understand, what I have shared with you here you will remember everything, except those things I have revealed unto you concerning the Divine Secret Garden.

And when the time is right, it will all return to your memory a little here and a little there. By the time you are finished, you will have

Time-loop Chronicles 3

written four powerful books, and they shall be read all over the planet by my very children. For it is truly the mystery of the Divine Secret Garden.

For now, I must send you along your way, to follow your path, as well as, we shall be separated, but I will never leave you or forsake you.”

It was then Giovanni was led into this area that had this water, it appeared black as oil, but it was due to no light being within, Giovanni was ushered to jump into the water and to swim. He was told it is like the water within your mother’s womb, it is dark, and foreboding but it is the place of birth.

Giovanni jumped in as he was instructed, but the water was so dark he could not see anything. He kept swimming and sinking deeper and deeper, and then fear set in his heart that he was about to drown.

At that point he saw a pinpoint of light ahead of him, he swam to this light and before the light was a pair of feet by the one swimming in front of him. He could see that it was the one he was speaking to, and he was transformed into light, and his light guided him along the way unto his destination.

Giovanni continued to swim and then he saw a new light and the one that led him faded away. Giovanni then reached out and came out of the darkness, and lifted himself up out of the water into a world, a strange world like nothing he had ever seen.

There was a large blue ocean, with a pink sandy beach, and there were strange fountains of water with the greenest palm trees anyone had ever seen, and many diverse people were passing by, to and fro, as if they were going about their daily life without a care in the world.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

They seemed to be aware of Giovanni and were friendly. He could not grasp what was happening, and then he walked over to a fountain, a beautiful crafted red-stone water fountain, like nothing he had ever seen, and he kneeled down to look into the water and then everything Walter had told him had rushed back into his memory.

Everything except why he was told he must return. The knowledge of the Divine Secret Garden was gone, not even a small morsel or tidbit.

Giovanni stood there trying his best to remember what Walter told him about the mysteries and secrets, but nothing was coming to him, not a single thing.

However, he was envisioning Walter speaking to him during this time, and he could even see his lips moving, he could feel the joy in his own heart as to what was being shared, but nothing of what he said had come back to memory, it had all vanished from mind like long lost dream.

Giovanni was so frustrated that he could not remember anything, other than his conversation with Christ about the Bible and that he was going to be used in the future, but nothing about the Divine Secret Garden. And then everything seemed to go black and Giovanni faded into oblivion.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(13) Mark Meets William Out of Body

Mark enters the 4th dimension upon traveling beyond the body, while there he felt this strange tug upon him, he wondered if his body was being pulled back. However, this was not the case.

Mark unknowingly was being pulled towards Giovanni, their combined soul was blending back together. Mark did not know what to do, he felt paralyzed to even stop this, and wondered what will become of him. His mind was foggy and became disoriented.

It was then Giovanni and Mark merged back into one soul-mind, while in the afterlife, but neither one was aware of this consciously. All memories of both merged together, Mark then recognized the man in his plaguing dream, it was his Father William in the after-life as well as Walter was standing by. And that is when he believed, William must have died.

Confused by this experience and his merger with Giovanni, he asked Walter, when did my Father die. Walter said, "He died during another time-loop. Mark then replied, "Why is it that I am seeing him now?"

Walter confirmed, "There is no time in the afterlife, everything merges together into the same event unless it is separated in confusion; it all depends upon the awakening of the soul. That is why you and Giovanni could link up even though he already left and returned, his true essence still remains here as everyone does."

While Walter and Mark were standing together, Mark then saw that his Father William was not cognizant of what was happening as he was allowing others to prompt him into entering the Tunnel of Light, it

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

was so peaceful and full of love. As Mark and Walter came close to William, Mark said, "Hey old man what's happening?"

William turned slightly where he only saw Walter, but only partially. Walter then spoke up, "I best leave you two alone." And Walter disappeared.

Mark then walked up to William and put his arm around his shoulders knowing William was being sucked into the light, he said to him, "That is Sol Malum's harvesting chamber getting ready to send you back."

Mark was surprised that he knew this, but his soul-mind had been opened to remember all events as if it was one period. William then saw the face of those who acted as his friends as they frantically tried luring William into the light, and then suddenly they changed into dark foreboding aliens and shadows of demons.

"You see old man, that place aint for you."

"What's happening to me?" William questioned, "Why is this taking place? Am I dreaming?"

"Yes, you are old man, but this dream is about to let you go."

"Where am I?"

"Old man, you are in another dream program."

"Dream program?"

"Yes indeed, the program of the dead beyond the veil."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark is scratching his head trying to figure out how he knows all these things. It was as if he had deep understanding of the mysteries of the Universe, and yet he knew not where it came from.

“Wait a minute, I am dead? Have I died?” William digressed.

As William turned around to look once again at the fellow speaking to him, he changed right before his eyes. He then morphed into his son Markie.

Markie had been wondering why he didn't recognize him if he had been his son from his timeframe, it was because his form was still that of Giovanni. And then he transformed only into Mark.

William now realizing responded, “Markie, is it you? Am I dead? Are you dead? Why are we here?”

Markie replied, “You are dead old man, you passed away in your sleep. It has taken you this long to reorient to this new dream program.”

“Why are you here then, did you die also?”

Markie chuckled, “I guess we can say we all died, but actually I am here out of body. I have been seeking you since I had been having dreams, these dreams were revealing to me that you had been part of my life during a different time-period, yet it was contemporary.

I continued to search why this dream was plaguing me, it was then I understood that you were my Father in another time. I was angry that we didn't get to meet in my new life, so I decided to see if I could find you on the other side. And Voilà, here you are.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Mark had learned from Walter as he taught Giovanni about the secret mysteries, about the Book his Father William was putting together, and it was now up to Mark to finish it.

Mark still did not fully understand, that was not the only book he would be writing, in time the knowledge that was hidden within Giovanni would enter Mark's mind in the future, where he will be writing a volume of books.

What Mark had yet to understand was, when he was regressed into the lifetime of Giovanni, that they both touched the Serpentine's Mirror, their lives were not only graphed together, but two different time-loops were accidentally merged.

In fact, the two-different time-loops that were merged was, the one when Mark was William's son and the other one is when Mark had no real family.

The reason Mark had no family and he was raised in a Foster home, was because accidentally two time-loops were merged but the more dominate one was when he was separated from any family, however, he still had memories of the older loop, and thereby the reason for his dreams, it was because of the merging that was taking place.

In the original time-loop, Giovanni had never merged with Mark from two separate timelines, but when they became merged, a new time-loop occurred. This time-loop created changes, some slight, some megalithic. Because the mirror combined them both, and astoundingly it over lapped an older loop.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

However, this merging would not be recognized until Mark and Giovanni, being the same soul, return from the past into the future of the new Time-Loop where Mark now resides.

When Mark finally returns, he will have all his memories restored from a previous loop and from his encounter with William and Walter as well as his connection to Giovanni. At that time both Beth and Marie's memories will also spring forth.

And it all occurs inside the ambulance on the way to the hospital where Mark regains consciousness as he reenters his body, and at that moment, all three of them remember who they really are.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(14) Waking Up on the Beach

The sun was beating down, it was hot, sand was covering his body as he tried to reorient himself as to what was happening. Giovanni was lying on a beach, he did not understand where he was or how he got there.

Soon the memory of the ship sinking began to permeate his mind. His lips were parched, and dry with sand covering them. He tried slowly to move but had no energy.

He tried to move his head back and forth slightly to ascertain where he was. Nothing but miles of empty beach with a large body of water to the South.

Slowly he was then able to sit up, looking straight ahead and all he saw was water as far as the eyes could see, wondering where he could be.

He then realized that somehow, somehow, he drifted on to land. Finally, it occurred to Giovanni, "Wait, I am not dead, I did not sink below into the depths of sea. I am alive."

He began considering why he was ever at sea in the first place, why did these things occur? It was then fear had taken over his mind, when he began to realize what he had done. He stole property from the Vatican.

He stole the mirror. "Why would I have done that, all my work and prestige within the church, and the Ministry as well as being a teacher, what would have possessed me to steal the mirror in the first place?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Giovanni's mind continued to operate... "My thoughts concerning the theft seemed insignificant at best, considering I almost died, but somehow lived, which now may lead to my possible capture and end up being killed anyway."

Struggling to understand why he did this, he then looked over to his right side and sitting partially buried in the sand was none other than the object of theft. The Serpentine's Mirror had also remained with him. His thoughts felt as if they were betraying him because he remembered letting the mirror go and it must have sunk unto the bottom of the sea.

Here he was, somehow alive, and somehow still having the mirror in his possession. Giovanni began to wonder if some sort of divine miracle was at play here.

Sluggishly he began to stand, as he wobbled a little he then looked around and saw land behind him. Still unaware of where he was, he believed that he must have transported to some land, but what land, where was he?

There was no movement, he did not see any people anywhere. For all he knew he could be back in Italy and the Vatican Guards could be on his tail.

Giovanni wondered what caused him to do these things, why had he stolen the mirror? He was perplexed but somehow deep down, he knew that something was strange about this mirror. But why steal it? What was that going to solve?

This mirror has strange properties in that it was able to show the future and the past even at the same time. It could reveal who was holding the mirror and it even showed maps of where one was located.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Boom like an electric shock streaming through the entire body, Giovanni realized, "If I touch the mirror it will reveal where I am."

He then began to reach for the mirror and stopped and said, "Wait, it would also reveal to the Vatican where I am."

It was then he realized he was between a rock and a hard place. Trying to deduce what would be the better option. Yet he realized to keep the mirror with him he would have to touch it eventually. And as soon as he does, it would reveal his position.

"What do I do?" Giovanni pondered!

"There must be a reason I am alive, this could not be happenstance. Something or someone wanted me to stay alive. And they made sure the mirror remained with me. This could not be an accident of fate.

Giovanni sat back down in the sand, thinking, and wondering. He then asked himself again, "Why did I steal this mirror?" Slowly but surely it began to dawn on him about his internal friend.

He had been possessed by something or someone that motivated him to steal the mirror. He then let out a shout, "Mark!" As he sat there moving his eyes back and forth as if he was seeking an answer from within.

"Mark, Mark are you there, are you still with me? I do not know what I am supposed to do, are you there?"

As Giovanni wrestled with his proverbial demons, he was at a loss as to what to do. There was no answer, no feeling, nothing seemed to be inside of him. His futuristic compadre had all but disappeared,

Time-loop Chronicles 3

leaving Giovanni wondering, did he go insane? Was all of this in his mind? Did he invent this entire story?

Asking himself, “We took the mirror because of its dark spiritual application. Mark wanted to bury it and then try to locate it in the future.” Very odd indeed.

Giovanni began asking more in-depth questions. “If the mirror truly is a record of futuristic time-lines, then even if we buried the mirror, what are the chances it would be in the future of the same time-line? Or have we done this many times before and we keep failing?”

Besieged with doubt still trying to understand this strange phenomenon, these things were way beyond his knowledge base and he felt as if he was becoming mentally ill.

Talking about time-lines, and changes, past present and future, it all seemed as if he had been taken over by some dark spirit.

Deep down he also felt it was genuine, that Mark was somehow a counterpart from the future. And they were trying to deduce why something like this was even being used, especially by the Vatican.

It seemed on the surface way out of character. For Giovanni was trained his entire life to believe the church was the holy power over the people, and as a Friar of the Franciscan Order; he lived his belief daily.

“But why would the church be using this device knowing it was part of the Serpent’s creation. Who was the Serpent? Why do we have his mirror? Why were we copying holy scriptures from the mirror and writing them down on scrolls pretending they came from the past when it was truly the future?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

What great deception have we been part of?"

After what seemed like hours of deep thought, Giovanni concluded that there was some divine reason he had this mirror and for some reason he was saved from certain death. It was then he realized, the Mirror must remain with him even if it still means; till death do them part.

This was a rather strange marriage between two obvious incompatible companions, but it was his lot in life. He then said, "For if I was saved before, surely, I can be saved again."

Giovanni, having made up his mind, reached out to uncover the mirror, and he grasped its coldness even after setting under the hot sun. He pulled it out of the sand bringing it towards his face and with great wonderment. He beheld the mirror.

"Something is wrong, nothing is happening. The mirror is blank. No words, no map."

The Mirror revealed nothing!

Giovanni began to shake it, swipe his hand over it. He tried knocking on it. He held it up to the sun. He tried anything he could to activate the mirror, but it was not working.

"It is not functioning, something is wrong, it is empty."

Giovanni began to wonder if the sea water had caused its malfunction. That maybe it is of no use anymore. It was then out of the corner of his eye he beheld a dark haired young woman walking on the sand of the beach about 200-meters away. She was alone, and unaware of her beach companion.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Without thinking twice, Giovanni stood back up and began running towards the woman while screaming for help, saying, “Help! Help me! I was beached after my boat went down out to sea. Please help me.”

The woman turned around to see a very disheveled Friar running towards her on the beach. She stopped and as he got closer she then replied, “Êtes-vous perdu Friar?”

As Giovanni got near to the woman, he realized she spoke in another language. Realizing she spoke in the tongue of French, he had much training in this language for he taught in schools in Paris, so he responded in kind.

“Je suis perdu, jeune femme, Où suis-je?”

Giovanni asked her where he was located.

“C'est Palavas-les flots, nous sommes à environ 15 kilomètres de Montpellier, au nord.”

She revealed they were in a place called Palavas-les flots and north of them about 10-miles or 15-kilometers was Montpellier. Somehow, he made it to the land to the north of the great sea in Southern France, which at one time was named Gaul.

Replying to the woman to thank her, he said, “Merci beaucoup.”

Without hesitation but seemingly a little startled as to why the friar was lost and knew not where he was located. She replied, “Je vous en prie.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

She began to walk away wondering if the Friar needed help. She then turned back around and said, "Frère si vous avez besoin d'aide, il y a un abbé à Toulouse qui peut vous aider."

She had stated if he needed help that there was an Abbot in Toulouse that could help him, the Abbot was a dear friend of hers.

Unfamiliar with this area, he replied, where might I find Toulouse. She responded, "de Montpellier c'est environ 240 kilomètres."

He realized a trip of this distance would not be easy, but at least he had a direction and he wondered if he was now being directed by forces beyond his understanding. He then thanked her and went on his quest to locate Toulouse and find the Abbot.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(15) Returning from the Soul-Travel adventure

The monitor begins to report the god-awful news, as the sound of the intermediate beeps showing that the heart had been somewhat active had finally stopped, leaving the ominous flat-line sound separated by the cries of Beth and Marie that provided an unwanted eerie moment, as the obvious sad end to what was to be a unique regression therapy; but now is losing out to the whim of fate.

The paramedics were frantically trying to revive Mark as it was obvious that his heart had stopped. One of the technicians could be heard speaking loudly saying, “stand back,” as the other one slapped Mark’s body with the massive 3000 volts from the AED sent coursing through his chest in hopes to revive his heart.

Sadly, the expectation gives way to the horrid reality of the horrific fact that Mark’s heart rhythm is not being detected, and now the fear of brain damage becomes a strong possibility. The EMT says one more time. “Stand back,” while they slap him with a new round of voltage.

As Mark’s body vigorously forces up and back down, still there is no sign of heart activity. Both Beth and Marie are chanting the Lord’s Prayer, “Our Father, which art in Heaven, hallow be thy name...” hoping beyond hope that they do not lose Mark.

Beth then pleads her case, “Please God don’t let him die because of a mistake I made, please help him.”

As Marie stood by wrapping her arms around Beth, trying to comfort her, as both were sobbing profusely, a silent moment occurred when a faint sound of a beep was detected from the monitor. Both looked up towards the technicians, and the paramedic’s checked the

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

monitor, and then another beep, this time registering with a much stronger sound, the flat line began to give way to intermediate beeps again.

Marie looking disoriented and confused said, "What is it? Was that his heart? Is he alright? Tell me something."

Beth joined in, "Is he okay?" Finally, the EMT on board, looking at the monitor said, "Yep that is him, he has come back from the dead." He then reported, "Individual responds to the AED at approximately 10:32 pm."

The girls began to cry with joy, and overwhelmed by the experience. However, the one paramedic said, "Listen, he is back, but we must be cautious, he was gone for over four minutes."

Beth replied, "What does that mean, is he okay?"

Marie then softly whispered into Beth's ear, "Sweetie his brain may not be all there."

"Oh my god..." yelled Beth, "Please do not do this to me."

As the precious moments of time flew by; suddenly Mark's eyes began to open. Everyone was peering down upon him awaiting a response, a word, anything that would prove he is alright. And then Mark spoke.

"Whoa, you guys won't believe it, it worked, I met my dad."

He was completely oblivious to what was happening.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

He then began to realize with the faces staring down upon him that something was wrong. Mark then asked, "What's happening, you all look like you've seen a ghost."

The EMT responded, "Well in truth it almost feels like we have. We almost lost you buddy."

"Lost me where?" Looking back at Beth, as both Beth and Marie had been woefully sad, but now crying with joy in their hearts, Beth replied, "Mark, you died, I screwed up and we lost you."

Mark then beginning to remember what Walter and his Father had relayed to him said with a smile, "You didn't almost lose me, that can never happen, not in this life or the next."

Beth then spoke, "What do you mean you saw your Father, you do not know who your real father is?"

"Beth, I met my dad from the previous Time-Loop, the one named William."

When Mark said this Marie had this epiphany, she looked at Beth and said, "William came over before we got into the ambulance, in fact he got into his car and he is on his way to the hospital once we explained what happened."

I didn't realize it then, but I met William before also, I accidentally slammed into the back of his car. He acted very strange, but I just assumed he was shaken up a little."

Mark then replied a tad confused, "How did you meet William, he doesn't exist in our time-line does he? When I met him in the afterlife I was told he had died from his previous time-loop. I was never told he

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

existed in my time-line. If he did, why was he not my father. And why isn't he married to Marie. What changed?"

Marie responded, "That is what I am trying to say, when he walked into the door today, I could feel something powerful about him, like we had always known each other. He seemed to have felt the same way, but he was not letting on what he knew, if anything. It was like he was not supposed to interact with me or us at this time, but he wanted to see us nevertheless. He then took off to the hospital to meet us there."

Beth then joined in, "That is very odd, I had the same intuition when seeing him again. I did a regression on him, and he went back into another life in the past, and yet the same thing happened.

Things were revealed that for one reason or another I was unable to hear or discover as if it was being blocked. But when he came back out of the regression his facial demeanor and his eyes told me he learned something important, and it had to deal with me."

Marie then volunteered her thoughts, "Do you think William knows who we are but apparently cannot let on, that we were not supposed to know, at least not yet?"

Mark wondered along with the rest as the EMT's were sitting back and wondering if we had all lost our minds. "Then why is he here, why does he live in our time-line, and why are we not his family."

As soon as Mark said this, a powerful memory came back, and he began to recall what he was told in the afterlife.

Mark then turned his head looking up as if in deep thought, he said, "I think I know what is going on."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Marie and Beth in one voice responded, “What?”

“He came back because he had a job to do, he had to help others. He had to do it alone in this life, therefore he was disconnected with his family. And I was told I would have to finish his work for him.”

Marie then came back and said, “That would not make much sense since, William is still around. I met him earlier, and you will meet him soon when we get to the hospital.”

“Mark replied, “I don’t understand it all, but that is what I was told, that I would have to finish his work, because he had died. That is all I remember. Maybe he will enlighten us when we talk to him about this work of his.”

At that moment the ambulance driver received a call alerting them to another destination as it was heard over the radio of the ambulance. The driver responded saying, we are going to the hospital to make a drop off and then we will be available for the other incident.

It was then the report from the radio specified a car accident and possibly one victim, when they read off the vehicle identification and where it was located, the EMT in the back said, “Wow, that is just up the street from us.”

He then called up to the front and enquired, “When did they say this occurred?” The driver said, about 10:32 pm.

The EMT said, “That is strange, that only happened a few minutes ago.” And the other one said, “Yea, the exact time we gave for the resuscitation of this young man. Wasn’t it 10:32 also?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Well by god I think you’re right. Wouldn’t that be weird to save one at the same time as someone else leaves?”

As Beth, Mark and Marie were listening, Beth had this eerie scowl appear upon her face. She wasn’t saying anything, but one could tell something was bothering her.

Finally, Beth spoke, “Guys, something’s not right.”

Marie responded, “Yea something aint right?”

Finally, the driver after learning that Mark was now fine, and everything seemed alright, said, “Let us stop at the accident scene, to make sure if there is anything we can do since we are right here.”

Within a few seconds, they were already on the scene. The paramedic’s got out of the back and went towards the car that evidently smashed into a bridge pole. It appeared the driver either lost control or passed out, because there were no signs of swerving or tire marks, it appears the victim just slammed in the pole while at full speed.

As one paramedic was about to leave the ambulance, he said, “Oh my god, no one lived through that one...”

It was then Beth peered out the open door, to look, and she gasped with affright. And she did not move any further as she sat there at the edge vehicle door, and they all could hear the radio as they sent the information. It stated, “Driver DOA at the scene at approximately 10:32 PM, crushed chest, and arms and broken legs.

Victim’s name... William Keuinedes, age 63.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Everyone in the ambulance after hearing this radio report just fell back and sunk into a trance. Mark truly was returned to replace William and finalize the work that he had started.

Mark sat there in astonishment saying, "But he died in his sleep, that is what I was told, he died in his sleep."

Marie then responded, "Honey maybe that is what happened, he fell asleep while driving. Or maybe it has something to do with this time-loop thingy you have been talking about."

At that very moment something happened, it was in the air, there was a feeling of deep memory release. Beth looked at Marie and cried out, "Mom, what is going on, how did we get here?"

Marie responded in type, "My God you are my daughter, my precious daughter Liz. What is happening?"

It became all too apparent that their past time-loop memory was restored, and they began to realize who they were and how they were truly connected.

Mark then sat there still stunned, and looked back and voiced his thoughts looking at Beth saying, "Hi sis."

The two gave each other a tearful hug. Then turning around looking at Marie tears came from Mark's eyes, it was a like a lifetime of feelings joined into his heart, he then reached out and gave Marie a hug that seemed to last for an eternity.

"Mom, I don't understand it, but I have finally found my family."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

While still partially in a daze, all of them realized that they just lost their husband and father, and then they all began to fathom the magnitude of the incident and began to sob even more this time with loud screeches of pain in their voices.

For some odd reason Mark then exited the Ambulance and slowly walked over to the car, the police who had arrived just after the Ambulance also reported in on the deceased.

Trying not to look at his father, Mark then peered into the driver's seat and on the seat, were a bunch of papers, they appeared to be collated into a spiral bind.

He then saw the title, it said, 'The Time-Loop Chronicles 2, The Lost Journal.' He then walked to the passenger side quietly and he grabbed the content and placed it in his shirt, as he then moseyed back around to the ambulance.

It was truly tragic as William had died instantly, he probably never knew what hit him, and his body was lying halfway in the street and partly still pinned in the car.

Mark took one look over to his dad lying there, and sadness filled his heart, but he did not let the grief take him over, somehow joy entered, knowing everything was alright, everything was as it was meant to be.

As Mark went back into the ambulance, he saw Beth and Marie still hugging each other with the continuous burst of sobs. It just felt like the emotions of all periods began to integrate into one long moment of sadness mixed with joy.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

And then as if coming from the all-sides of the ambulance a soft soothing voice began to speak. "It is now time that you all finish your work, each one of you have a job to do. There is no fear, death is not real, be prepared to be transformed; by the renewing of your mind."

And then the voice said, "I have always loved you Marie, your memory has now opened beyond the constructs of the prison gates, and you are now remembering our time together..."

More tears began to flow from Marie's eyes, as she looked up and all around trying to ascertain where the voice was coming from. She then responded, "I do remember, William, I truly do remember. Our many times together was wrought with great joy and great pain, and now I am beginning to realize what it all meant and why it happened."

William continued, "And to you my children, my oh so little girl who has become a beautiful caring woman, once again, I love you with all my heart, and one day we shall be back home together sharing our paradise."

Beth replied, "Thank you so much dad for the memory, I feel like it was yesterday when we were all together."

"And as for you my son, Mark you are the stabilizer, you are the finisher. You grew up so quickly and learned so fast, that in mere moments you will excel way beyond your years, this is because you have been trained for centuries for this very moment.

For I am always with you, I shall never leave you. You were never alone, even when you felt that you were disconnected and were unlike anyone else, in truth, you have always been as we have always been, separated from our true home.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Remember Mark, we just saw each other, and we spoke. And yet it must seem like a 1000-years ago. You once called yourself, Markie the Alien, today I call you, My Son the Angel.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(16) From Montpellier to Toulouse

After being left on the beach believing he had died and somehow now resurrected, Giovanni has gained new life, and after speaking to the stranger on the beach, he then headed North on foot and finally reached Montpellier.

Being extremely exhausted after all that he had endured, he spent the night behind a small Inn as he had nothing at this time to trade other than his loot of the strange glass artifact, and he was certainly not going to let go of this gem.

The next day, Giovanni had found a caravan of vagabonds traveling in the direction he was heading, having horses, oxen, coaches and wagons, and fortunately they had enough room to allow the lowly Friar to join in. Giovanni took the time to contemplate on all that had occurred while traveling with this strange group of Vagrants to Toulouse.

It took about 12 days to make the 240-kilometer expedition but along the way it was quite uneventful, as if ancient travelers just doing their thing like we might do when going to work every day in traffic, it aint fun, but we gotta do it.

On the way our caravan of vagrants often entered small towns, to search for handouts and trade for food and water and various other provisions. Giovanni had been concerned that the Vatican Guard may have sent news to various provinces to be on the look-out for the Friar, as he was now enemy of the state, or better specified, as enemy of the planet.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

About the 4th day they came to a town called Narbonne. While there some of the traveling companions had left the caravan while others came aboard

One such fellow was an Italian Monk. As soon as Giovanni saw him a wave of both joy and fear struck. The joy was the realization that someone was now joining in that he would have a better connection to. The rest were mostly drifters and beggars, and were dirty and unkempt and often had no desire to properly communicate, nor could they.

However, the fear entered when he realized that another Monk may have received the report about the thieving Friar and to be on the lookout for him. Obviously, there would have been mixed emotions.

When the Monk made eye contact with Giovanni, he was excited to learn that a Friar would be his traveling companion. This alleviated any fears that Giovanni's secret might be unraveled, which would have caused great disquiet. The Monk did not seem to recognize him at all.

For the next couple of days, they spent their time discussing religious orders of the Holy Roman Empire and the differences between the sects, but it was mostly surface talk, nothing of any great import. The Monk then revealed that he had also come from Roma, and had his training in the Vatican.

When Giovanni heard where the Monk at worked he jerked a bit trying to hide the mirror even more. The very name shocked him as he began to wonder if he was being set up for the kill.

At that instant, the Monk looked to Giovanni and said, "Oh, and that reminds me, did you hear of the thief who stole Vatican property."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Giovanni took a couple of gulps while trying to act surprised, and replied, "Someone stole something from the Vatican, might you know what that was and who the thief may be?"

As the Monk took a sip of water from small flask inside a leather pouch, which had been tied to his hip, he then responded, "No, no identity, I was in Marseilles for a while and news from the Vatican guard had come as they were seeking a traveler. But no description was given. It was as if they never expected to find this thief anyway, but were still going through the motions.

One of the guards had reported that they believe the thief had died during a storm on the sea, but nothing was ever verified."

Obviously, Giovanni had learned that his identity was still safe at least from his traveling companion, and the Monk never even heard that the individual was a Friar, they just spoke of the thief without revealing any defining identity, nor did they even reveal what was stolen.

Nevertheless, what Giovanni was about to hear coming from the lips of the Monk was going to surprise him, when the Monk continued speaking after taking a few more sips of water, as it was quite dry as there had been no rain for a while, which was rare in these parts. The Monk then continued his oration.

"I shouldn't speak of this, but I had worked in the Vatican as special envoy for the Holy Father."

Giovanni wondering what work that may have been replied, "What was your business?"

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

The Monk chuckled a bit, "You might not believe this, but I was working in the lair of the Vatican."

"The Lair?"

"Yes, within the lower parts of the Vatican they have a Library of ancient works, and I was working down below doing something of a very secret nature."

Giovanni then began to choke a little and was offered a sip of water from the flask the Monk was carrying. He took the flask and quickly took a few sips. He then looked up at the Monk and said, "Secret work, can you speak of it here?"

"I guess it would do no harm because no one would believe it anyway. My work was to make copies of parchments and then send them forward via couriers."

Suddenly Giovanni realized who this Monk was, it could be none other than the 12th worker in the Vatican Library working on behalf of the Serpentine's Mirror. The Monk was very careful not to mention the Mirror.

He continued to wonder, was this Monk really who he said he was. Was he trying to entrap him? Did he know all along who Giovanni was and was setting him up?

What are the odds that Giovanni would run into the very Monk who he had replaced in the Secret Vatican operation? Giovanni began to get agitated and was becoming rather nervous, so much so, that the Monk responded to his rather antsy actions.

"Are you not feeling well my friend?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“I am fine my traveling companion, I guess I am rather tired being on this long journey to Toulouse.”

The Monk then countered, “That reminds me, where are you from? Where was your order exactly?”

At this point Giovanni was unsure how to respond, he didn’t feel the Monk was engaged in a nefarious set-up, because he just didn’t seem to fit the part. But Giovanni could not have been sure whether it was a trap or not.

He then began to tell the Monk that he was a Friar from the Franciscan Order, but he didn’t reveal his place of residence. He wanted to make sure how the Monk would react to this news.

“Oh yes, I have friends in the Franciscan Order, haven’t spoken with them in years. Where were you located?”

Quickly Giovanni uttered in a fast tone hoping the Monk didn’t hear him correctly, he quietly revealed, “Tuscany.” He had not revealed where he was within the Order he revealed where had been born and raised.

“Tuscany, you say, hmm,” as the Monk gathered his thoughts, Giovanni was beginning to feel the jig was up. And then the Monk continued...

“No, can’t say that I know anyone from there, although I once had a cousin that found employment there, but he moved on.”

A sigh of relief came over Giovanni as he felt freedom, at least for now he was safe. Yet he was so intrigued about who this Monk was, he asked, “Why did you leave your work within the Vatican, that would

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

have been prestigious employment for anyone to have the honor to work as an envoy for the Holy Father?"

"It is a long story my friend, I have not been completely honest with you. I was not just copying from parchments, um, I was, um, working with something that one might say was unearthly."

Giovanni acting oblivious yet realizing that the Monk was not trying to trap him anymore, however, the Monk was most definitely trying to hide what he had been doing.

Seemingly they both had the exact same problem. It appeared also that the Monk was feeling Giovanni out to verify if he could be a plant. Giovanni then responded, "I don't understand... unearthly?"

"Let me try to explain, I was doing something that I felt was spiritually dangerous. I do not know how to phrase the words. We were given something to use that had properties that were not of this world."

"What might that be?"

"My friend, I am afraid, not everything that we think we believe is really based on what we know, there are forces at work that are deadly. And some of these evil forces are within the Vatican." The Monk backing off a tad then continued... "Oh, I have said way too much!"

Giovanni wondering how much trust he might have with the Monk began to court the idea of showing him the mirror. But he held back and decided to ask more questions instead.

"Without being intrusive, could you explain what it was you were doing that was of a dark nature, especially within the Vatican?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Giovanni realized he needed to make the Monk feel a little more comfortable trying to get him to release the information a little at a time, Giovanni then tried to lead the Monk to reveal more...

“I am aware also of some dark forces that exist and have heard rumors that certain activities were being operated in the Vatican, so do not fear to speak of these things with me.”

The Monk appearing a little flustered, took another sip and said, “I think this water should be made into wine, but of course I do not drink spirits.” He took a couple more sips and continued...

“My friend, our world, this place of existence is not what we have been led to believe.

In my work at the Vatican, the Holy Papa gave twelve of us something very odd, something that did not belong in this world, um, how do I say this an, ‘enchanted glass’ that could see into the future. Oh no, that is not quite correct. It made the future.”

“Excuse me?” Giovanni playing along.

“When we began, I would look within the magical glass and writing would appear, this writing revealed many things. It also revealed ancient documents, however the documents came from the future not the past. Oh, this doesn’t even seem real to me, then how could I possibly expect you to believe?”

“Go on, do not stop I am listening with great eagerness.”

“Like I said, writing would appear on the glass, and then we would copy what had been revealed within the strange object onto scrolls, and parchments. And then it became historical record for the future to

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

rely on that which supposedly was coming from the past, yet paradoxically it actually came from the future.”

The face on the Monk revealed clearly that he didn't even believe what he was saying, but he said it anyway.

Giovanni trying to settle the Monks confusion, replied, “You are right my friend, this is very strange, but I am desiring to learn more.”

The Monk reluctantly responded, “This glass had properties unknown to humans. It was not from this world. It could reveal many things beyond that of the scroll information. When the glass or whatever this relic was had become comfortable with the operator, this charmed relic would then begin to speak...”

“Wait, what? It would speak?” Giovanni asked.

The Monk obviously getting more nervous seemed to snicker and snort while clearing his throat, he then continued, “I know what this may sound like, but not only did it speak, it became part of the one who was using it, and it spoke through them.”

“What do you mean?”

“It attached itself to the operating Monk like a parasite would attach to a plant. Let me try to figure out a way to explain this. The glass eventually after enough time became connected to the operator and then entered the soul of the man and became the man... I guess what I am saying, it is a form of possession for no other better term.”

Giovanni was stunned, he could not believe what he was hearing. He began to reconsider his taking the mirror. He then apprehensively

Time-loop Chronicles 3

responded, “You said the glass spoke and then attached itself to the operator?”

“Well yes and no, the glass didn’t speak per se, not that it couldn’t speak, but the human the glass attached itself to, began to speak the words that somehow were originating from the glass. The person would speak in different voices, different languages and dialects. Or maybe even differing spirits.”

“Didn’t this concern the others that were there?” Giovanni wondered...

“They all became used to it as if it was all normal, they even suggested that the differing voices were some gift of god, like speaking in tongues. I don’t think they had the same fear I had about it. Because this glass was taking over the person, completely modifying who they were. It was changing them into something else.”

“You mean someone else?”

“No, ‘something else’, something that was not... human.”

Giovanni began to wonder why he didn’t notice the changes in the other Monks he was working with. He then asked the Monk, “Did you join after the others were already there?”

“Yes, in fact my specific chair had been abandoned by several others who had also been chosen for employment, but every one of them quit their job using some excuse as why they could not continue.”

“Then the others had always remained from the beginning?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"Well, I am not sure about all of them but many of them had worked in this secret project for years."

"Didn't you notice in the start if these others were odd or strange, you said this glass could take a person over making them something other than human, didn't you recognize this in the beginning?"

"Ah, well, not really, they seemed perfectly normal when I joined, 'the thing' that was in them, whatever it was, is very smart, it would not let on that it was controlling these other Monks."

"Did you feel anything inside of you that would let you believe it was taking you over?"

"Interesting that you asked this. When I began to realize what was happening, I was less accepting than most. Therefore, whatever this entity was, it did not penetrate my being, I seemed to have been protected from it even though I had worked there for a good part of a year."

"What caused you to finally leave?"

"It happened one day, I still remember that afternoon vividly, what I haven't explained was, that there was also a glass in the center of a large table we worked at, I never understood exactly what its purpose was beyond that of correcting future time-lines."

"Correcting future time-lines, that is odd?"

"Yes, it would turn bright red and then send the information to one of these glasses, and then we would know to correct the error. This one day however I witnessed something that brought great fear into my heart. And that was the day I left, and never came back."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“What might that have been?”

“Let me see how I can explain this. The center glass began to change or transmute into something.”

“Transmute into something?”

“It changed into a dragon and when it did it began to draw some sort of energy out of the other glasses like it was absorbing it into itself.”

“I am not sure I understand.”

“The center glass changed into a demonic looking dragon, which stood tall upon the center table, almost 3-meters tall, (about 10-feet) it was a giant and as it was drawing energy out of the other twelve glasses, I then realized what was happening. Each glass also changed into a head, a severed head; like another dragon’s head.

It then lifted off the table; and all twelve heads connected back to the dragon, it became one dragon with an extra twelve heads, the dragon being the thirteenth. Yet that was not all, the energy it was taking within itself, as if it was sucking it out of the glass or the head, that energy was also coming from the individual who was working with their magical device.”

“What do you mean sucking energy out?”

“My friend, I think it was taking their souls and it was making them part of the dragon!”

“Oh my god, my god, this glass can do that?” Giovanni becoming extremely nervous as to what it was he was secretly hiding within his

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

cloak. He then became even more agitated when he realized if this mirror could do all these things, then the center mirror must know where he is located as he had perceived when Mark was still part of him.

However, they had believed you would have to touch the mirror to trigger it to allow it to reveal their destination. The Friar made sure the mirror had been covered with a cloth that he had on his person.

The Monk continued... "When the energy came through my mirror and then it tried to come into me, it didn't work, because I had not released my soul to this object yet, but I knew then that is how it was taking over the human.

I guess one would have to work there quite some time to have this activity engaged. I could feel a tugging against my very inner being, but it stopped, and the Dragon with twelve heads began to scream as if it was angered that it could not take me over. And the dragon yelled some words as if it was calling me by name that I did not understand, it screamed out, "Sune Ule No."

"Hmm, very strange, I am not sure he was calling you by a name but more that this was a language which sounded 'Anglo' and it sounds to me like it was saying, 'Soon You'll Know.' It means that one day you would understand.

You told me that this glass was able to perform many strange activities, could it also recognize where you are at any moment?"

"Most definitely!"

"Oh no!"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“However, it must be turned on.”

“What do you mean?”

The glass can be turned off, if it is off it is no longer functioning.”

As relief once again came over Giovanni, he then asked the question, “How can the glass turn off, and why would it turn off?”

This question seemed odd to the Monk, he began to wonder if he said too much. He then began to speak less about the mirror, and became quieter about his connection to the Vatican Secret Glass.

Over the next couple of days just prior to entering Toulouse, the Monk didn’t speak much, and Giovanni didn’t press the issue. However, he continued to wonder what turned off the mirror.

Finally, as they were entering Toulouse, the Monk decided to speak one more time about the strange glass. What he said stunned Giovanni, but now things concerning the mirror began to make more sense.

“As I was speaking to you earlier on the trip about the magical glass.”

“Yes!”

“I told you that the glass can be turned off. I had learned that at one time, in the earliest of days during this operation, that a new operator had unintentionally removed the glass from the Vatican. What they learned was, the further the glass had gone away from the Vatican it began to lose a connection. Somehow the glass works on some sort

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

of connection and the further it moves away from the source of the head it gets shut down.

One of the other Monks had revealed to me that it was likened unto one of the heads being cut off. The Dragon would now have eleven heads instead of twelve unless they found the missing glass.”

“So, there would be no concern about the missing glass, right?”

“Well, that is the mystery, this is something I never understood. And that was, they were very concerned the glass got into the wrong hands.”

“Why?”

Laughing a bit under his breath, the Monk responded, “Well, that is what I thought, if it is cut off then who cares. But evidently in the correct hands, it can be turned on again.”

“Wouldn’t that help them locate the glass?”

“It would seem so, but what I began to surmise was, once the head is separated and then it is turned back on from another source, it cannot be graphed back into the dragon unless the dragon regains the mirror in its possession, it now belongs to a new owner and he or she can then use the glass anyway they desire.”

“Really?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(17) Mark learns of the Lost Journal

Mark reads the lost journal compilation that he had grabbed from William's vehicle, and then learned about Walter's book, the ones that revealed Tim's notepads.

Mark then begins on the path of finishing the book that his Father William had been preparing and almost completed before his death. However, since the memory of Giovanni has not yet returned, Mark still does not realize he will author many more books in his life.

However, the last books will come from memory of what Walter had taught Giovanni and then removed it all from Memory until the time was right that all these things could be revealed.

After Mark finished reading what William had written, he then located the book Walter had made based on Tim's experiences. He learned that the book was in William's possessions and he figured out a way to go through his things where he located Walters Time-Loop Chronicles Book One.

Mark was almost in a daze in what he had learned, he could not put it into words. Not only did he learn of the mysteries of the world, but he discovered his parallel life as William's son.

He learned about his mother Marie of that same cycle. As Well as Beth. It floored him to think a thousand years had gone by, and maybe multiple time-loops, and yet the feeling and emotion was as if it was yesterday.

Once he was able to gather his emotions, he called Marie and Beth and had them both come over. He wanted them to read the manuscript.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

He prepared a few glasses of red wine, because he felt it would be needed. Once the two women had entered, Mark wasted no time in handing them both a copy, as he had gone to Kinkos to make duplicates.

He commented to himself that this was too important to be reading over someone's shoulder. He knew once everyone got to certain parts the emotions would flow, and the tears would be like a dam breaking at a river front.

As the girls entered Mark's small apartment. They had already been talking about the night and wondered if they would be able to read William's journal. Mark didn't let on why he wanted them to come over.

They noticed there was urgency in the tone of his voice, but he played it pretty cool. He simply said, "You guys got to see something, it will change your life."

As Marie and Beth entered, the first thing Mark did was hand them each a glass of Merlot, and asked them to take a seat on the couch and then as they set their individual glasses of wine on the coffee table in front of them, he then handed them the manuscripts.

Mark told them, "Guys, I got to go out for little while, but please begin reading, I can't even begin to tell you how many things are about to change in your lives."

As Mark left, Marie and Beth both exchanged a couple of witty sarcasms, as if, how can there be anything more than what we have already experienced. And then they both opened the first page, and both snuggled back in their seat under a couch blanket, and began reading.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The intro floored them both as they learned how William learned about the lost notepads of Tim, and how he had once been on a path of learning in a previous cycle, but he never made it out.

When they got to the part where he was uncovering lost clay jars with cryptic messages, it seemed rather unbelievable. It was then Marie looked in front of her and saw another book sitting on Mark's coffee table and she picked it up and looked at the cover.

The Time-Loop Chronicles – The Day the Earth Fell Backwards- By Walter Keuinedes. When Marie got to Day One in the Lost Journal, she stopped.

She looked at Beth and said, Sweetie, I think I need to begin where it all began. And then she set aside the Lost Journal manuscript and began reading Walters Book.

During the time she was reading she would get flashes of memory telling her that once upon a time she was aware of some of these incidents. But now reading what happened to Tim and his counterpart the Chief, she was absolutely staggered.

Here was Beth still reading the manuscript and Marie now reading the first book, and each of them were gasping in awe after every few pages. It was as if something amazing triggered them to where they were completely overcome with intrigue and mystery.

Mark then returned, he noticed that Marie was reading Walter's book and asked, "What's the deal, did you read the manuscript already?"

"No!" Marie expressed, "When I saw the original book, I realized I needed to start at the very beginning."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Mark then replied, "I thought you would be more interested in learning about your parallel lives, but sure, go ahead, read them both, because the foundation is important to grasp the coded mystery."

No truer words could Mark have spoken than to say, their lives would be changed. This evening would mark the date where everything began to come together, not only about their personal lives, but the mysteries of the world.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(18) Giovanni meets the Abbot William

This had become a very odd and strange moment in time when Tim had bi-relocated and together along with William who had been under regression therapy with Beth, they each would meet one another in Toulouse France.

They spoke to each other and shared details of how their surprise interaction had taken place. It was then when the moment had come when the two of them would have to return. Tim would return to the Chief, and William would be awakened in Beth's office.

However, something unique occurred that was unexpected, especially from William's point of view. William noticed a strange friar walking into the Abbot's office; he then began to stare at this individual as if he was seeing someone he knew but was not sure. William was picking up some subtle memory of seeing the Friar in the afterlife where all time is the same time.

Tim saw that William seemed out of phase and believed he may have returned via the regression, and the real Abbot was coming forth. At that point, Tim decided to return to the Chief.

However, William was still there, but acted as if he had departed so he could discover who this individual that had just walked in the office might have been.

William knew this was a Friar probably wanting to speak to the Abbot, but he felt he may have known him. It was indeed Giovanni who had been sent to speak with the Abbot, and to discover what he needs to learn. However, the real reason had been, he was to meet William.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

For some reason unbeknownst to himself, William spoke these words, "Be not afraid, I am not from your time I am from the future."

Giovanni hearing this began to realize why he was sent to Toulouse, and he responded with a great sigh of relief, "I am happy to meet your acquaintance, I was sent to speak with you."

William reacted a little shocked by the Friar's response, but then realized that something incredible was occurring.

Giovanni, without any trepidation revealed all about the Serpentine's Mirror to William, while handing it to him. William just listened with one ear while staring boldly at the mirror in absolute astonishment.

And then suddenly the mirror became activated in William's hands and it began to glow a brilliant red in color and the information they saw on the liquid screen began to reveal the hidden mystery.

Evidently, William must have had the magic touch because the Mirror was activated, and it began to reveal all the data not only from the present but the future. Since William took over the body of the Abbot as he once was in a past life, it has now become a dual merger like Giovanni and Mark.

Once William touched the mirror it began to reveal data on both William and the Abbot, however, what was not understood is another compression had taken place, and it would create another time-loop but merged together with an older one...

The mirror not only began to glow bright red, but it showed Isaiah 11/6 having changed. Giovanni explained how he copied Isaiah 11 before he had removed the mirror from the Vatican.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The mirror was now indicating that a change had been made and now it must be copied for future generations. Giovanni looking over the change along with William, saw that the scripture had been changed by King Henry VIII in the future, and both pondered, wondering, how many scriptures had been changed over time, and what does this reveal about the Bible?

William said, "This is fascinating, and unnerving. What is this device and why is it here in this time where technology does not exist?"

It was then Giovanni barked out, "Oh no, I forgot, I was told that when the mirror is working that the Vatican will know where we are located."

"And why is this a problem?" Of course, while Giovanni was explaining the mirror in all its esoteric machinations, he had happened to forget to tell William that he illegally lifted the mirror from the sacred vault.

Giovanni now reacts, "I stole the mirror from the Vatican and now I am on the run from the Vatican guard that would stop at nothing to retrieve this mirror and even kill me."

"My God, what have you done?"

William shocked at this began to wonder why he was sent back to this time, was it more than just meeting Tim? Why had he come back to this specific time at the exact moment Tim had come also, and now runs into Giovanni who just stole an out of this world technology from the Vatican, which by rights should not have been there during this Medieval period?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

What is this mirror he wondered? And why was it that he never heard of this strange artifact before? He then asked Giovanni, "What possessed you to steal this Mirror?"

While beginning to snicker yet still being very apprehensive, he replied, "I think it is because I was sort of possessed."

"Excuse me?"

"It is a long story... but since I was sent to you, it may be the proper time that I reveal why I had stolen this mirror."

The Friar had begun to divulge that he was chosen to sit among the other eleven, by Pope Gregory X, to become a facilitator and operate the mirror to make changes in the future. As he spent the next hour explaining everything. It was like a bolt of lightning hit him when he said, "But there is one thing I have not mentioned."

"And that is?"

"Umm, Mark!"

"Mark? Who is Mark?"

The Friar continued... "This is going to sound strange, but somehow, I was taken over by my future self. Well, taken over is not quite right, we both existed within my soul. It was Mark that realized that the Mirror was being used for nefarious means, and he alerted me that something was not right.

We then made a plan to steal the mirror and flee from the Vatican, and in so doing I have brought great wrath from the Holy See as well as the Holy Father upon me."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Mark, you say, that is fascinating,” William then uttered these words under his breath, “Could it be...?”

“Could it be what?” Giovanni perplexed by William’s comment.

“Oh, don’t mind me, I am just thinking out loud.” Please continue.

Suddenly, Giovanni turned white as a ghost when his memories were being brought back. He looked at William and said, “I know you.”

“Where do you know me from?”

“I do not have the words to explain this, but when Mark and I were united on the sea; fleeing from the Vatican guard, our ship went down, and uh, well, umm, I died.”

“You died? You don’t look dead.”

“This is the part where it is going sound very strange, I truly had drowned at sea, and then instantly I became aware. I was, I had been, uh, how do I say this, I was, I guess I was in heaven?”

“You died, and you were in the after-life?”

“Yes, I believe so, and while there, I met a man, a man named Walter.”

“My god!”

“No, yea, well he was named Walter, but it was not Walter, it was, I think, I think he was Jesus.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Jesus, you say?” William mumbled under his breath, “Walter is not Jesus.” He then continued... “But you’re telling me he called himself Walter, but somehow you took him as being Jesus. Well, maybe in the afterlife things appear different than what they appear here. Maybe you were expecting to see Jesus and Walter showed up.”

“No, I don’t think so, but I am not sure, nevertheless, he did call himself Walter.”

“My friend, my father’s name was Walter, is he the one that sent you to me?”

“Possibly, I was instructed on many levels, but I can’t remember it all. I spoke to this Walter, and he told me things unknown from humanities awareness.”

“Could you please elaborate?”

“This brings me to the reason I think I know you. You were there also.”

William didn’t know what to say, yet it was very intriguing, but not seemingly possible in his mind. “Are you sure I was there?”

“I think so, and so was...”

“Who?”

“I think it was Mark!”

William pondered under his breath again, and he spoke these words, “Mark died?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

"I think Mark had died because we drowned."

"But you didn't die, how come he died?"

"Well, the thing is, Mark was with me until I awakened on the beach and then he has been gone ever since."

"If you drowned at sea how did you get to the beach?"

"I don't know, but that is not the most confusing aspect about this."

"What was that?"

"I didn't just land on any beach, the land we were heading towards was not that far away, maybe 25-30 kilometers. But the beach I landed on was on the northern part of the great sea."

"And you have no recollection how you got there?"

"None whatsoever, I just awakened on the Beach and Mark was gone."

William thought about it for a little while and replied, "I don't think Mark died unless something went wrong with the regression. I believe he must have been regressed and entered within you."

"Regressed?" The Friar remarked.

"Yes, I also come from the future, as I remarked earlier, I am being regressed right now and have entered a body that I had lived through during this period."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Obviously, Mark was being regressed, and he entered within you, and the two of you became one, because you were him of his past, as you are, here and now. So, evidently, you and Mark are the same soul."

"Then how did I meet Walter, as well as you and Mark on the other side?"

"I do not know, I am not sure, however, it may answer one question as to how all time exists at the same time."

"Uh, what, would you please repeat that?"

"It is something I had learned from long ago, it could be you were speaking to all of us from another time, after we had passed on from our respective lives. It may be that you were speaking to our souls from the future. But now the question is, why are you being sent back to me? What purpose would there be? What can we possibly do together, at this time?"

Giovanni responded, "Could it be the mirror, is there something within the mirror that we might discover, and we needed to be together to uncover it."

"That makes good sense to me, but what might that be? You have said this mirror can do many things, maybe the answer lies in the mirror. If the mirror can do many strange things, can it speak? Can it also hear and respond?"

Obviously, William was considering how vast the technology is within this artifact.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“I am not sure, I was told it can speak through the operator, but as for the mirror itself speaking, I am not sure. but if it can, maybe it can respond if we ask it questions.”

William staring into the mirror, as the mirror had then returned to normal, the red glow disappeared.

“Ah, that is perplexing?” Giovanni injecting a thought.

William countered, “Is there something you are not telling me.”

“From what I understand it would continue to glow red until the change was made. This may mean someone made the change.”

“You were supposed to do that, right?”

“Yes, but maybe another Monk back at the Vatican received authority to make the change without me.”

William countered, “This must mean they are aware, and most likely on their way here. So, if there is something we need to unravel about this mirror we need to do it now. How fast can they send news in the attempt to capture you?”

“They have relay points, someone could be here in a matter of days. Trumpets can sound the alarm via coded messages, and couriers can relay the message rather quickly.”

“Then that does not leave us much time. We must figure out what secret this mirror holds for us.”

William again staring down into the mirror began to ask questions, he said, “Is there a secret we need to know?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

A few seconds went by and then the mirror revealed some writing that exposed, "There are many secrets, but to keep the secrets they must not be revealed, thus you could not know them."

William realizing this was not going to be easy wondered what it was he could say to get the mirror to unravel this conundrum. He then looked back into the mirror and said, "Who am I?"

The mirror responded in writing, "If you do not know then how I can I be of any help?"

Giovanni then replied, "This is not getting us anywhere, the mirror is laughing at us."

William concurred, "Yes, it seems that it is speaking in riddles."

Giovanni then decided to touch the mirror something he had not done since the beach. He then reached out and grasped it while William was still holding it.

The Mirror began to flash, and writing and pictures appeared in liquid form, showing pictures of Mark and Giovanni, and William and the Abbot, as well as where they were located, past and future. It seemed like tons of information coming from the mirror. It almost seemed like it was broken. Information was flashing out everywhere on the screen and then it just went blank.

Giovanni then took the mirror away from William, and the mirror deactivated.

William had validated that Giovanni was a past life of his son Mark from the future, now it was all beginning to make sense as to why William had this deep feeling of connection to this Friar.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Both Giovanni and William looked at one another in a quandary. And William reached over to the mirror and touched the screen again and it turned back on and the face of William from the future was staring back at him, and the face seemed alive, no longer a picture, but a video enactment.

William then commented, “For some reason this mirror activates when I touch it, but it deactivates when you touch it. I wonder why?”

And then like magic it showed the person of the Abbot inside the Abbey, as Giovanni was viewing the strange visual he began to look at the inside of the Abbey within the mirror and he began to also peer around him. Everything seemed perfect except; one thing was out of place.

There was a partition on the north part of the wall, behind the desk that was not in the mirror. The mirror seemed to know everything, but it didn’t know about this added partition or for some odd and unknown reason was unable to view it. It was obvious it was revealing the Abbots office in real time, but that partition was not there inside the mirror.

Giovanni then looked at the mirror and pointed for William to see, “Look at this.”

“Yes, what does it mean?”

“I don’t know, but look at that wall.”

Giovanni pointed to the left of where William was standing at the wall and then pointed down into the mirror. He said, “Notice there is something there added, but the mirror doesn’t seem to know.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

William thought about it and said, "Yes indeed, I wonder why the mirror does not see that extra partition."

Both glared back at each other and then stared at the wall. William ever so carefully placed the Mirror on the desk and the two of them walked slowly towards that partition.

William began to knock on the partition and there was an obvious hollow sound. Then Giovanni knocked on the wall next to the seemingly added partition and the sound was a deep thud, revealing it was strong and sturdy.

William began to feel around the partition to see if there was anything there that might reveal the mystery. Giovanni was still rapping the wall next to it and then went to the other side of William and began knocking on that side. Still there was a strong thud.

Then William began to feel along the side of the partition as it extended a couple of inches from the interior wall. And halfway down, he touched something that seem to be protruding out of the side of the partition. He then looked at Giovanni and said, "I think we may have found something."

William then pushed upon the protrusion in the wood panel, realizing it appeared to be a button and at the same time it looked like a knot in the wood. When he pushed it, the partition moved revealing an opening behind the wall. It was not just any opening, it was a door to a stair well. Another room had been in the Abbey and it was hidden.

They both wondered who may have known about this, or has this been hidden for ages. How long has it been since anyone had ever gone down these steps into this dark dungeon?

Time-loop Chronicles 3

It became obvious that they had discovered the missing link as to why the two of them were put together. They were meant to find this secret room, but why?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(19) Monks scramble over the loss of the Serpentine's Mirror

Questions pertaining to the magical mirror began to occur. Why was there a mirror in the middle of the round table where the Monks joined together to fulfil their unique operation.

As the story unraveled, the center mirror was what was called the 13th Apostle, or the Serpents brain. This mirror regulated any change in the time-loops concerning future or past knowledge.

When a Monk copied from the mirror to place the contents on the scroll, they did so with all knowledge that the information they were reading was coming from the future. However, one thing Giovanni never understood was that as they were copying the future, a new time-loop was occurring.

What this meant was, even though they were copying from the future, there were periods of time between their time and the end of time where things could change. Because in every time-loop even though many of the same characters involved may be the same, at least most of the time, they do not always make the same choices.

Someone may make a change, or do something differently than they did in a past time-loop, therefore if a change is then made, it would most definitely occur after the Monk copied the original information from the mirror.

It was then when the change manifests, and the Matrix sends that new information back to the Serpent's head, or center mirror, causing it to glow red, the new information is then sent to one of the twelve mirrors where the initial copy had originated, and then that Monk responsible for the initial copy of the scroll must make a new one.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

They must recopy the mirror's information along with the changes, and send it forward. Now some may wonder what about the old scroll copy, it is still out there in scroll form, because the courier had taken it and already disseminated it for the future.

This is both true and untrue. The original copy that the Monk placed on the scroll had been changed by someone in the future, which became a new time-loop, thus the scroll itself would have to be changed, so there would not be two different scrolls for the same subject matter, only one in each time-loop unless there was a forbidden merger.

And since it is a separate time-loop no one would ever know that the change was made, at least in principle. As an example, if the courier sent a message that revealed, "All cats are yellow," and then something changes along the way, and in the future, it is known that all cats come in many different colors, then this information would be sent back to the specific Monk who originally stated this.

And the center mirror, or the Serpent's head would flash red and then the Monk in charge of that specific work, would validate the change.

What happens to the original story that all cats are yellow, it is simply no longer a reality and that information that was passed on would be discarded or changed.

However, if there were a merger of timelines, you would have two different realities linked together, where some will remember all cats are yellow, and the other side would say, no there were always multiple colors of cats.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

While the Monks were gathered around the table still doing their duty after the Friar had stolen the mirror, something occurred, and it was paramount.

A change occurred in Isaiah 11 and the red glow appeared on the center mirror which then sent that change to the Monk's mirror responsible for the textual content. The problem this time was, the center mirror was glowed red, but none of the other Monks saw any other mirror change to that red color.

They all knew it was the one that was stolen by Friar Giovanni. That is when they scrambled to find a Cardinal to tell Gregory, that due to this event they now know where the mirror is and most likely the whereabouts of the thief. The center mirror not only glows red, but it reveals the time, the date and location of the monk involved, or in this case, the Friar.

When the center mirror had changed to red, it also established the location of the specific mirror that was used in the information dispersal, and it also revealed someone had the power to reactivate the mirror even while it was separated from the serpent's head. And this intrigued everyone.

One of the Monks climbed on to the table into the center and saw exactly where Friar Giovanni was. He was discovered to be in Toulouse France at the Abbey. His cover was blown.

However, some of the Monks began to debate that the mirror shuts off as a protection against this very thing, because they were instructed that once the mirror leaves the location, it no longer functions, so they were scurrying around trying to figure out how it activated again, and from so far away.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

When the Monks had located Cardinal Pierre of Tarentaise, they began to explain what had occurred. They told the Cardinal about the meaning of the Serpents head glowed red, Pierre then calmly said, "Okay, there was a change, then take care of it, I am too busy to be bothered."

They then had to advise him that the none of their mirrors had been glowed red, this means that the one responsible for the change was Friar Giovanni. Pierre then said, "Explain to me why I should be concerned." The elder of the monks said, "My lord, it reveals where the Friar is located at present."

Cardinal Pierre's eyes grew double in size. He then asked, "Is there anything else I should know about before I speak to the Holy Father?"

It was then revealed from the mirror that in the early 16th Century a man named King Henry VIII was responsible for adding and copying scripture. The mirror revealed that when he came to the document that exposed Isaiah 11/6, he was angered by the verse that spoke of, 'the Lion shall dwell with the Lamb and a child shall lead them.'

According to the mirror, it stated, the change occurred because Henry was offended that the Lion was being made out to be something derogatory, when in fact it was the symbol for the British Kingdom during the Roman Empire and beyond.

He seemingly did not understand, it was meant to reveal a fierce animal that somehow became more peaceful and calmer and that is why the lion could be with the lamb and a child.

Of course, King Henry VIII did not always have all his faculties together. The reality of it was, is Henry did not like the idea of the Lion,

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

being termed as, dwelling with a lamb, which he considered were the peasants, as the sheep or lambs, and therefore it would mean his kingdom would be equal to, unsophisticated, boorish and uneducated persons. That is why Henry was so offended.

King Henry then decided to change the Lion to a Wolf, he told one of his many wives, named Catherine Howard, that a wolf better describes this scripture because a wolf often comes in sheep's clothing.

This way he makes the Lion Kingdom appear grand, and then makes the lower life peasants appear as the true infidels, as the wolf would often dress as sheep, not in lion's apparel. And he therefore changed the entire scripture and made the lion into a wolf and then added a small cub within the latter part of the verse; so as not to emphasize a true lion.

It was then accepted by fiat from the early authors of various Bibles, as scriptural dogma having never realized that it had been altered, because to them they never saw the original.

At this point in time, the Monk that holds the correct mirror should make the change on the scroll, but this was not set as an absolute, in fact, any mirror could make the change. They all functioned to serve the same purpose. Since there was no mirror and no monk, the other Monks asked Cardinal Pierre if they could make the change using the 13th head and send it forward.

Pierre agreed, and the change was made... for the new time-loop. The problem was, a merger had occurred that they were not aware of, meaning the original scripture came through, and then like magic it eventually changed at the end of days, leaving memory of the erased verse.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

This occurred because the mirror recognized William of the future and therefore the change that went through earlier was set due to William activating the Mirror.

The problem was, the other change also occurred, but it did not happen until the future during William's time line, so like magic, one day, the scripture revealed the lion with the lamb, and then the next day, the scripture revealed the wolf with the lamb.

However, both came through to the end of days, but one was known by the changed time-line via Henry and the other was known by those who originally merged from the original copy, into the new time-line because of William. Therefore, great confusion entered the land, where now some were perplexed by the change, and others saw nothing odd.

When this happened some of the people in the last days began to awaken that something was wrong. And it led into a gigantic conspiracy.

Whereas some were claiming to know that changes had been occurring, while others felt it was simply faulty memory. Those that recognized the changes knew absolutely they had occurred, but there was little proof to enable them to explain this odd manifestation.

As always, the conspiracy was basically pushed aside, until more and more changes were detected proving two or more timelines had intersected, yet only one seemed dominant even though the memories were merged together in the same world.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(20) The Discovery of the Lost Medieval Prophecy

William and Giovanni go down into the lost dungeon.

Each carried a candle, which offered little light to help the deep penetrating mask of darkness. The two of them were careful as they meandered their way down the steps having to maneuver past the creepy crawling creatures whose world was being betrayed by two new companions in their prison of mystery.

The spider laden homes were everywhere making it all too obvious that no one had been down into this lair for a very long time. Possibly a couple hundred years; maybe not since its original construction in the 11th century.

The steps were basically wood slabs over levels of dirt that had set over the years. There were only about ten steps that one had to traverse to get access to the floor of the hidden vault.

As they finally reached the bottom they lifted their candles and noticed the room was very small, no more than 10' by 10', and along the back wall were old wooden shelves that appeared very fragile, as it appeared that even as much as a slight breath could bring them all down.

William muttered to himself saying, "What is this place, and what could possibly have been stored here for this length of time?"

Giovanni wondering the same thing had little to say except for, "I feel like I am reliving a memory." However, he was so mesmerized at what appeared to be old clay jars setting gloriously upon the shelves in front of him, having been untouched by human hands for a century or two, he just tossed the daunting memory aside.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

William stood there in silence and then said, “Oh come on, is this another one of the Chief’s tricks?”

Giovanni having no clue what that meant said, “Pardon me, the Chief?”

“Oh, don’t fret, it is just something about the clay jars that reminded me of a... never mind.”

As the two of them stood before the shelves; which were at the height of five feet, having three different shelves stacked upon the other, they realized that something of great import set before them.

Directly in front of them there was a mixed wooden-iron box, it looked ancient as well as it was inscribed with Greek Lettering. Giovanni was profoundly moved by what was on the exterior of the container.

He gasped while William turned to look at him and said, “What have you discovered that has caused you to react so?”

Giovanni having been trained in several languages did not know how to respond. William was able to communicate with Giovanni because the person of the Abbot that William had moved into via regression had spoken French and Latin, and thus William also carried those languages within himself and this made it possible to interact.

However, Greek was unique, and although Giovanni had enough linguistic training he was not completely sure of the Greek, because it was an older Greek, however, he knew enough to quell their confusion.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

By now, Giovanni was stunned, he didn't know how to respond to what he was reading. Finally, he whispered to William and said. "Do you know what this is?"

"No, my friend, I have no idea."

Giovanni took a couple of extra breaths as the atmosphere below was quite pungent, he then spoke these words, "The Inscription on the side of this box says, 'The youngest Disciple of our Lord and Christ, John the Beloved.'"

"What, are you saying the disciple of Christ was in here?"

Giovanni continued, "Look, look at beneath the script there is more writing. It is revealing, these are the mysteries our great teacher taught us in our travels, and they were to remain hidden, we were told we were not to speak of them openly, only to those who were being prepared."

The iron box had what appeared to be an ancient type lock on it, but the lock was old and appeared that it was losing its integrity. William then reached out and touched the lock and it crumbled in his hand. The years had taken its toll upon the container.

Mystified by what they were seeing, the contents of the box obviously held a treasure that had been hidden by the youngest disciple. What could be inside this box that had laid silent for all these years?

Giovanni then turned to look at William, and William countered with an auspicious look back. They wanted to get inside this container to see what has been lost to the world.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Finally, William grabbed the box lid and slowly began to lift it up and inside was some sort of grit, the box was filled with sand. Giovanni then rifled his fingers in the sand and voila, something was within the sand. The sand must have been used to keep the contents protected and to absorb moisture.

As he reached in with his thumb and index finger, he carefully lifted out of the 12"X6"X3" box what appeared to be an old parchment with faded writing on it.

The writing was also Greek with some mixture of Hebrew. As William held his candle near the parchment, he then looked at the eyes of Giovanni as they grew twice their size while he was discovering the meaning of the words.

William wondered, "Was John the Disciple here in France? Did he hide this box here for a purpose?"

There has long been rumors that John took Mary the mother of Jesus as well as Mary Magdalena and others and they came to Southern France by way of the sea, which was then called Gaul. They traveled by sea and nearly drowned as their boat had been in a horrible storm. They landed supposedly in a place called Saintes-Maries-de-la-Mer, it was a little fishing village, South of Marseilles.

Strangely Giovanni had just been on a similar journey and he was beached about 55 km west from where this landing had taken place. Almost as if he was following the same path for some unidentified reason.

As Giovanni was reading the content he could not believe his eyes. William impatiently waiting for Giovanni to say something, exasperatingly blurted out, "What have you found, tell me old man?"

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Giovanni reluctantly responded, "According to this parchment, John was alive in the 11th century. Based on what I am reading he and his family had to find a place to hide. This journey he and his family were on manifested due to them having great enemies and they were being tracked down to have them killed.

John is also saying, this this is how our Teacher was killed, they tracked him down like a wild dog and slaughtered him before all the people as a sign and a witness to never go against the dark lord that rules this earth.

It is saying that they had left the town of Ephesus, because they were being hunted by very dangerous entities of the Roman Empire. This document is saying that Rome was in Turkey not in Italy."

Giovanni's reaction was one of confusion. This came as a great surprise to Giovanni but not so much to William. How was it possible that this kind of change could have occurred, that Rome was in Turkey and not in Italy.

William having learned much from the writing of the Chief as well as what he learned from his own experiences to create the Lost Journal, was not surprised by this information, nonetheless, it was still remarkable to see it now being confirmed.

Giovanni continued... "It is saying that John had infiltrated the enemy to expose them and find what it was they were seeking. This was very dangerous. If my eyes are not deceiving me, this is revealing that the Gospel of Mark in the Bible had also been written by John, but it was changed.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Wait a minute, no, it is saying Mark came from the Book of John and certain changes were made to make it appear it was a different book by another author.”

Giovanni continued... “I am not sure what this is truly purporting, but what it’s revealing is, Mark could not have been a disciple of Jesus, he wasn’t even alive when Christ was here. He had been born three years after Christ died.”

“Wow!” William uttered, “That is news to me.”

This document is revealing that the ‘Mark’ mentioned was not Mark, but John. It states, Miriam the Mother of Jesus and John as well as Mary, Christ’s companion, lived in Ephesus after Christ was crucified in Rome.

Evidently John came to learn that there were traitors to the gospel, and the message was being revamped by Roman subversives that had infiltrated the gospel and changed it.

According to this, John decided to play their game and he then infiltrated a group through a friend named, Barnabas. Barnabas had been working with a man named Saul, who had changed his name to Paul.

Evidently, Saul was not a good person according to this, he was a plant, someone very powerful in the Roman Empire, who had stolen the Gospel and changed it. It then says, I dare not even reveal his true name here.

When John met up with Barnabas, they also met up with Paul, but Paul realized that John who was now going by the name of Mark was not one of them.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

William pondered, "Are you saying John went by the name of Mark, I do not remember this in the Bible?"

"According to this, a great fight occurred between Barnabas and Paul as to what to do with John, who was now named Mark."

William then interrupted Giovanni and asked, "Is any of this familiar to you?"

"Giovanni then replied, "I have heard of such things but have never actually seen them with my eyes, but only through stories handed down."

William having some knowledge of the Bible said, "You know, I do believe the Bible did say that Mark was surnamed John, if my memory is correct, but I never thought anything about it, so I forgot about it."

Giovanni continued trying to ascertain the words, "Yes, John was Mark, and he was not liked by Paul because Paul knew him to be one of the original disciples and he would figure out that Paul was an imposter and infiltrator of the faith. It says Mark and Barnabas parted ways, and Barnabas and John-Mark sailed to the island of Cyprus and Paul went another way."

William trying to figure this out, asked, "So who was Mark then in the Bible?"

Giovanni was not sure about it because he had never seen the Bible before, but what he was reading was revealing, "There were two Marks. One that lived in Africa and one who was John that lived in Ephesus. So, there was a blend of both Marks added into the same time frame, but one was John also surnamed Mark, and the other was the younger Mark who was born after Christ left."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

William asked, "Then what is the mystery? Is it that Mark was actually John, or John was actually Mark, WHAT?"

"No, I don't think so." As Giovanni chimed in. "The mystery is something else. But John is trying to reveal why they had to flee, their lives were in danger.

"Oh, Dear Lord..." Giovanni gasped out loud over what he was reading.

Giovanni obviously had stumbled on to something of great import. William deeply wrought with great interest says, "What ole man? What did you find?"

"Evidently John had written one of the mysteries that Christ had taught him, and it was never to be revealed until the time of the awakening. However, it is saying, not until the end of days shall this mystery be unveiled."

As Giovanni continued reading, "By what I am understanding the time of our Lord Christ was in the 11th Century, this is when the disciples lived along with Christ."

Giovanni contemplating what he was reading, replied under his breath, "So many lies, so many deceptions."

William then asked, "Does it shock you that Christ was alive in the 11th century."

"No, that part I knew, we have always known Christ had walked the earth a few centuries ago."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"You want to know something strange, in the future we are told that Christ lived in the 1st century."

"Well I guess if you can change Rome from Turkey to Italy, then anything is possible."

William wondered, "How do you think they were able to pull that off in such a short time?"

"There is no doubt that much of the Roman power extends from Turkey, my guess is, the Vatican made the change, so they could have more power. And I am wondering how much this mirror was involved to make that change."

"Good point Giovanni, maybe that is how they changed Christ's timeline also."

As William continued to wait for the answers that Giovanni was deciphering. The candle that William was holding was melting and he replaced it with another, so Giovanni could have better light.

Giovanni then said, "John is claiming to have been very young when he met I'esus. He was only 15-years old. He called himself a shepherd."

William responded, "Wasn't that what Christ was, a Shepherd?"

Giovanni looking back to William as his face glittered in shadows from the candle light, remarked. "Uh, no this is not what this is saying. John and the others were Shepherds, leading sheep from city to city."

"Weren't they fishermen?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Not sure, maybe before they met I’esus they were, but after that they actually took sheep from city to city to provide lamb’s milk and other sustenance.

It is saying that John was 18 when I’esus was killed, he then left Rome and went south to his old home town called, Ephesus. And he took both Mary and Miriam the mother of I’esus with him along with several others. This then became their home for many years.

William declared, ‘You know, I heard Jesus mother was named Miriam from a book I read, but never thought anymore about it.’”

Giovanni continued, “John was then 32 when they had to flee Ephesus. Miriam the Mother of Jesus was 64 and Mary was 38.

William responded, “Wait a second I remember learning from the Chief’s words that Christ died in 1086AD. That would mean if John was 18 he was born in 1068 and that would verify what you are reading, he was 32 when he fled Ephesus.

This would have occurred in the year of, 1100AD. That means Miriam the Mother of Jesus was born in 1036 and had to be 17 when Jesus was born, in 1053. Miriam was then 50 and John was 18, and Mary was 24 when Christ died...

But I am still not understanding the great mystery.”

Giovanni continued to read and then came upon the secret. “These jars that are on the shelves, these were placed here by John. They hold the hidden mysteries of the Kingdom of the Father. Each one is a mystery. There are five jars, and five mysteries.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

William reached out and grabbed one of the jars, it was very fragile. In fact, part of it broke in his hand. He then removed the lid of the jar very carefully, and looked within. He noticed some very old parchment. But it was in very bad shape, when he attempted to remove it, the parchment crumbled and vanished into dust like residue, however there was writing on the jar itself. It revealed,

“The Mystery of the Harvest?”

Giovanni jumped back a second and said, wow that sounds familiar, but nothing came to him. They then proceeded with the second jar.

Giovanni then responded to William's attempt to unveil what was inside, “I was afraid of that, these parchments are too old to have survived down here with this humidity.”

William then reached out for another jar and poured out its contents and then placed it back down, again the jar began to crumble, and the parchment inside had been dissolved, but like the other, a message was on the side of the clay jar.

“The Mystery of Humans and non-Humans.”

And once again the third jar, and same thing occurred but revealed an esoteric message on its exterior.

“Egypt's Pyramids hold the secret to the EYE.”

Obviously, none of the mysteries survived the time and climate. Then finally they read the 4th message,

“The Spirit domain and its encoding!”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

William whispered under his breath saying, “Then why were we to find this place if the information was lost due to deterioration?”

Giovanni not even realizing what he was saying, replied, “I don’t think it is lost, I think it will come back to us later.”

“Excuse me?” William groaned.

“I don’t know, something came to me to say we will one day remember.”

Finally, William lifted the 5th jar and he immediately sought for the mystery on the jar itself, but there was none to be found other than it said, ‘**One More**’. Neither one had any clue what that meant.

He then lifted it up and realized it was much heavier, it was unlike the first four. This one had weight to it. He then slowly opened the lid and noticed like in the iron-wooden box that it was also filled with sand.

He slowly turned the jar over and poured the sand out onto the shelf, and then amazingly the contents of another parchment dropped out of the bottle, but this time in fairly-good condition.

Giovanni turned to look down at the sand and the parchment, yet he turned back as if not being phased by what he saw, and continued to be mesmerized by what he was reading in his parchment.

As Giovanni continued reading he added, “The mystery was sealed, it is not to be revealed until the time of the end.”

William then wondered, “Hmm, I wonder... he then took out the mirror, and asked it a question that even Giovanni was surprised about. He asked, “Is this Abbey still in existence in the future?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Amazingly the mirror began to reveal the Abbey of the future, it will be known as, 'The Basilica of Saint-Sernin,' and it is a church in Toulouse, France, the former church of the Abbey of Saint-Sernin or St. Saturnin, still exists to the very end of time.

That was all William needed to see... He now believes the reason that this ancient secret was hidden like this was because it would last until the end of times. And then the mystery can be unveiled.

Giovanni comprehending what William was thinking, responded, "When Mark from the future entered into me, he desired to bury the mirror so that in the future he could retrieve it. I am now wondering, what if we left the mirror hidden in this room so that not only will the mystery be revealed in the future, so also will the mirror be discovered like Mark wanted.

At that moment William opened the parchment that he discovered in the jar, and on the top of it revealed, 'The Lost Gospel of John the Beloved, dear friend and brother to Jeshua.'

It was then Giovanni read from his parchment that John had left all the jars with the same copy. There were not five different mysteries, there was one. And it said, the one will survive via the mystery of time, the revelation of the rest of the jars mystery, will return to the one in soul-memory.

Not exactly sure why he did it this way, but the parchments that were covered with sand did survive and in pretty good condition.

Yet they still wondered, could they survive another 800-years if they could barely survive a couple hundred years? That is when Giovanni had an idea, he said, "This mirror has powerful ways and means to disburse information. Since we can copy what the

Time-loop Chronicles 3

information that the mirror gives us onto scrolls, why can't we copy this information back into the mirror, to reserve it for the end of days?"

William thought, "What a great idea!" They could store the mirror within this dungeon, and then he asked the mirror another question, while Giovanni held his candle above, to give better light. William queried the Mirror, "Is this room ever discovered?"

In big bold letters, "YES!"

William then asked again, "When will it be discovered?"

The Mirror replied, "Do you not know what year this is?"

The two of them looked at one another and then Giovanni said, "Yes, it is the year of our Lord 1273."

Finally, William said, "Oh I think the mirror is toying with us it is saying we have discovered it. We need to ask another question. He then spoke, "Will this dungeon that we have discovered in the year 1273 ever be discovered again?"

The answer somewhat plagued them. It showed, "Riddle me this, if the secret of the room and its contents remain hidden until the 21st century when Mary discovers the Holy Grail, then will the parchments be discovered if they are destroyed?"

Immediately the Mirror shut down again, and did not turn on. When William asked another question, nothing happened, the mirror was blank.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Neither one of them knew how to respond, because it appears a woman named Mary will exist in the future, and she will discover this place.

Yet they wondered, who is this Mary? Did William know her, was she someone involved in the church at St. Sernin? They simply didn't know how to respond, but the answer was there in front of them, that the room will remain hidden until the 21st century.

So now it was up to them to hide the mirror and the contents of the room. William trying to ascertain the meaning of this puzzle and enigma wondered, "Will the contents in the room be hidden, or will the room itself be hidden?"

Giovanni replied, "Good question."

But first, they had to know what the mystical content was saying that was left in the jar. Giovanni then took the scroll out of William's hand and reopened the new Parchment very carefully, and read the entire message.

After he did this the mirror turned back on, and glowed red like it had done prior when a change was made in the future. Amazingly they both witnessed the change, the content of the parchment that Giovanni just read, came through upon the Mirror as change in the Bible.

"WHOA!!!" As William yelled out.

Mysteriously the change was revealed as the Gospel of Mark chapter 17. But this was not written by Mark, but by John. What manner of deception did this mirror interject into the operation? Both

Time-loop Chronicles 3

were perplexed. All Giovanni did was read it, and somehow the Mirror reflected what was seen in Giovanni eyes.

At this time Giovanni asked, “Does Mark have 17 chapters? William replied, “I don’t know? But does this mean the mystery is in the Bible and has been there all this time, or at least until this change was made. Did we somehow place a new chapter into the Bible for the future? Have I even read this before and didn’t realize it?”

Neither one could figure out this perplexing dilemma. But somehow, the mirror had already interjected the change from the future to be copied from the past. But how are we able to copy this information and send it to a courier.

Giovanni then realized, the center mirror most likely also began to glow red, there is a great possibility that one of the other Monks copied the new information because my mirror is missing, and someone had to do this, they would never realize what it was they were doing because all they know to do is what they are told.”

William said, “Then that is it, they copied the information and sent it through a courier, and now it is in the future. It must have happened that way.”

Giovanni then thought a bit about it, and said, then why did our mirror glow red, I was not dealing with the translations of Mark, I was doing Isaiah.”

William thought about it, and said, “I bet it is because we uncovered the lost mystery and the Mirror seems to be able to recognize things that occur surrounding the mirror itself.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Remember, as you told me, the Mirror changes time, those that write upon scrolls are meaningless to the overall equation. We are the connection, and somehow the mirror related to us when we made the change simply by uncovering it.

And therefore, the center mirror recognized that we were the caretaker of this knowledge, without it knowing or even caring who we are. This mirrored device seems to work on its own, connected to a higher source, not of this world.”

It was then Giovanni began to read the mystery, and when he was done, neither one of them understood it, it didn't make any sense. But they agreed, in the future it must make sense.

They then ‘hid the mirror’ in back of one of the shelves, and replaced the sand and contents back in their proper respective places. One in the jar, and the other in the iron-wooden box. They carefully replaced the items back to where they found them.

They walked back up the steps and shut the secret panel, at that moment, William began to feel lightheaded, and he vanished, causing the Abbot of St. Sernin to return. When Giovanni noticed that the Abbot was no longer William he decided to play it cool. The Abbot asked, “Who are thee Friar, and where did you come from? You just appeared and manifested out of thin air.

Giovanni replied, “I am just visiting, I wanted to come to speak with you about the Abbey and its historical relevance.”

The Abbot then replied, “Sorry my friend, I must have fallen asleep, and I do not feel well, it might be better they we speak another day.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Giovanni complied, saying, "That would be fine, till another day."

When Giovanni turned around to leave there were sounds outside the Abbot's office, people scurrying around, others being shoved, the sounds of an invasion. Obviously, something was happening, and it didn't sound friendly.

Immediately, a loud banging occurred upon the Abbots door, it was obvious someone wanted in, and within seconds the door was forced open, and standing there were several guards with swords drawn.

And the only thing that was said, is one of the guards held up a scroll, opened it by rolling it out, while extending both arms as he read and revealed its contents.

"By the decree of the Holy See, and the Papal Office of Pope Gregory X, Friar Giovanni you are under arrest for treason."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(21) Pope Gregory Orders the Death of Friar Giovanni

When news was reported that the Friar had been discovered, Pope Gregory was alerted. He was told that Giovanni was in Toulouse France, and they prepared to dispatch a communication via relay protocols. The message should be there within a couple of days, if the relay worked properly.

Gregory and Pierre of Tarentaise spoke inside the Papal office and there was little levity to dispel the dark mood. Gregory was visibly upset, and offered a solution.

When Pierre asked, "How are they to deal with the thief?" The voice behind the black curtain joined in and demanded punishment.

The voice angrily responded, "The thief is to be put to death and not just any death, let this be a reminder to all who dare threaten our control. When the thief is located, he is to be crucified on the center street among the people as a sign of our power and control. Make sure they all know this was an enemy of the Vatican and the Holy See."

Gregory then asked the mysterious voice, "How are we to deal with this? Giovanni cannot be erased without some sort of explanation. Should we remove all titles from him and renounce him as a heretic, and denounce his entire order?"

The voice behind the curtain continued, "No, once he is removed, we will erase this event for all time, no one need ever know about Friar Giovanni ever working for the Vatican.

Thus, none of his titles will be removed, he will always continue to be revered as the Friar he was. And from this time forward, he shall be

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Canonized by the 15th century. Since he had such a raucous journey galivanting the countryside with my property having a good adventure, we shall name him, Saint Bonaventure.”

“How shall we explain his untimely death?”

“Everyone dies, we shall say he died mysteriously, maybe even by poison, no one will ever know the difference.”

“Won’t those who witnessed his death know differently?”

“They know nothing except what we want them to know. And we shall simply say his death occurred in the following year, therefore no one will recognize the connection. The Friar and his order will remain as it has always been, however, we will have gotten our vengeance against those meddling hands who interfere.”

“Meddling hands my Lord?”

“Yes, I am now aware who this friar is, how could I have been so foolish, we were duped into selecting him for their desire... I shall speak no more.”

After the voice spoke, Gregory then revealed his intentions. “Not only is the Friar to be executed, but anyone he has spoken with must also meet the same damnable fate. So, let it be written, so, let it be done.”

Orders were to be given to the guard that this notice was to be relayed quickly to reach the town of Toulouse. The local guards were instructed by written notice that this event as instructed by Pope Gregory X, would be implemented as a direct order from the Pontiff himself.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Anyone circumventing this order would also be executed. After the order was written, Gregory looked at Pierre and said, "One more thing. The mirror must be found, and returned."

Pierre wondering, "How do we explain the mirror to the guards. How will they know what they are looking for?"

Gregory realizing something else was required, he then changed the orders, "Send couriers with the guards to travel to Toulouse, the messengers will be four of the chosen Monks who work with the Serpentine's Mirror.

They shall know what to look for. Therefore, the guards are to be notified not to kill the Friar when captured, but they are to be imprisoned waiting the time of their execution.

While the prisoner and or prisoners are waiting to be crucified, when the four Monks arrive on the scene, they will question anyone to discover, who might have also betrayed the Holy See."

"My Lord?" Pierre exclaims, "What if the Monks fail to retrieve the mirror, for how will they know where it is?"

Gregory sitting in deep thought was ready to express his will, when the voice returned from the black curtain and began to speak for him.

"Send each Monk with a mirror and separate them throughout the town, so that I can activate the mirror... I mean, I can verify the location of the lost mirror. If they get close enough when it has been activated... then at least one of the other mirror's will discover our lost treasure."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Oops, it appeared the voice behind the curtain slipped up saying he would activate it, this was information not to be known. It represented two validations, one that the voice behind the curtain is in direct contact with the mirrors, and two, it also reveals this entity can lose connection and power over the mirror and needs something to regain that connection.”

The voice continued... “If they fail to retrieve the Mirror, then execute them also, but do not crucify them, that would be difficult to explain, simply run them through with a sword away from the towns people, and then set them aflame.

After that, destroy the four mirrors by crushing them with rocks, and bury them, because we cannot chance having those mirrors get into the wrong hands. Can you even begin to imagine what would happen if this were to occur?”

The frustration of the voice was obvious, but it left everyone mystified as to what these mirrors really were.

The voice finished his instruction, “This will leave only seven mirrors remaining while the eighth is missing and presumably never to be found again.”

Gregory was perplexed by what the voice had stated about destroying the four mirrors and killing the Monks. He did not question the command, but he was most assuredly confused.

Pierre then scribed upon the scroll the words that were spoken this day, and sent them with the messenger Monks who had no idea what was in the message, all that they knew was they must use their mirrors to retrieve the stolen mirror as they were to hand the message to the head of the military in Toulouse.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

The Vatican Guards were on their way, and the relay had begun, the initial message that was being relayed had revealed, "When this Friar is discovered, throw him in prison, along with anyone else who he may have spoken too, until the Messenger's enter the city with the Holy Sees' proclamation. And not a hair on their head is to be harmed until the messengers arrive in the city."

After everyone left the Papal office, however, Gregory, Pierre and the mystery voice remained. Gregory then asked, "My Lord, you stated that if these mirror's fell into the wrong hands, it could result in horrific consequences. I am baffled, I thought you controlled all?"

The Voice then responded, "I am the Lord thy God that rules this planet, and no one shall challenge me."

"But Lord I was not challenging you, I was simply asking why you would care about the Mirror."

"You infidels, you do not understand because you have no mind, it is controlled by..."

The voice then hesitated, Pierre and Gregory peered back and forth to one another wondering what had happened.

The voice then regained its composure and then revealed something major.

"My copy holds the true rule and power of this universe, and he rules it by that which permits the mirrors to function. When I was cast to the earth I stole twelve mirrors that were directly linked to the one, or the head, that which my copy operates and controls.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

I believe I could then control the Earth by learning the power of the mirrors, and then eventually escape in the ships.

“The ships my Lord?” Gregory pondered.

“Never mind... When I had taken the mirrors, I discovered it can only effect events locally, it cannot release us from our prison, nor can it rule in the world of my copy that works with those who are seen above in their flying ships, because they operate them from above.

Over time I created a thirteenth mirror and gave it part of my soul, but I learned I cannot control the other mirrors if they are removed, I can simply use them like anyone could who might discover what they can do, if they can activate them.”

“My Lord, what can they actually do?”

“If these mirrors were to cross the bounds of time no longer being in our control, in the future anyone finding these mirrors could use them to change events in our local world, instantly.”

“How can that be?”

“You, foolish souls, do you really think that you are in control of the future, by scribbling on parchment? You are simply lapdogs performing my will. The mirrors work on their own, connected to the true power of the Universe. They were not supposed to be here. The mirrors use the power of the grand power, but they cannot control that power. They can only interface with it.”

“Then why doesn’t your copy destroy the mirrors or come and remove them?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“My copy... in all its grand illusion, it doesn't want to get involved. It doesn't care, because it knows the mirror can only affect this realm. My copy exists in another realm. It pretty much allows anything to occur here unless it decided it wants to make a change.”

Cardinal Pierre then joined in, “Then why should we concern ourselves with the lost mirror?”

“You, impudent infidel, if that mirror were to reach unto the end of days, before my copy pulls off another time-loop, then anyone could change the world's memory.

All they would have to do is create something and then flash it on the screen of the mirror, and it will instantly create new memories linked with old ones. I could then lose my power when the cattle begin to awaken that their world is not real.

That is why! Is that sufficient for you?”

Greggory suggested, “My lord, I thought the time-loop was your creation?”

The voice began to scream and bellow in horrible tones spreading fear far and wide within the room.

“My creation,” (He yelled!) “Do you really think I would continuously destroy my power and give it back to my copy if I wanted the time-Loop. I hate the time-loop, it interferes with my keeping control. I would do anything in my power to stop it, even if it means the total annihilation of the world, which is what always happens anyway.”

Pierre being stunned said, “Pardon me Lord?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

There was no response.

Pierre had one final question,” My Lord what is your copy, and why do you refer to it as an ‘IT’? Is not your copy not real?”

“Pierre, my copy is part of my soul, it is an ‘intelligence technology’ Get ‘IT?’ Once upon a time we used to be as one, until the great wars. We divided and became two. I was to rule over earth, my copy would rule over the heavens. But it was a ruse, I along with many others were imprisoned.

In the beginning, many of us were sent out in ‘three ships’ and we were stranded on the earth. And for some reason, we could never enter their dimension again. Therefore, we would never be able to prevent my copy from fulfilling the ritualistic goal.”

“My Lord, if you came here in ships, then why would you not leave with them also.” Gregory wondered.

“Because they deactivated the damn mirrors, and once they reactivated we could not link to the mothership anymore. That part was disconnected.

My copy removed me and many others who were also copies, by using a machine called, ‘Intelligence Technology’. My copy then became a Qubit machine.”

“What is a Qubit, and what is the fulfillment of the goal?”

“This is beyond your intelligence level at this time. However, a Qubit is a substance that can be in multiple places at the same time or in different places separated. It is a 4th dimensional interactive rod.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

The goal is to change the human to become likened unto the mirrors and become biological interfaces with the machine, having no minds or awareness of their own. They will become qubits or quantum cell technological advanced biological robots.”

“My lord, this must not be allowed!”

“Why do you think I fight so hard to free humanity from the grip of this technology by causing them to fight against my copy? To run amuck, to demoralize, to destroy, if they do the opposite of what my copy desires, hopefully it will force the plan to ultimately cease. ‘IT’ is very jealous you know.”

“My lord, is your copy, GOD?”

“My copy is the god of all gods.”

“So, is Jesus Christ really his son?”

“It depends, which one are you talking about?”

“I don’t understand, is there more than one?”

“You fool, yes, the one belongs to my copy, the other, we do not speak of, he belongs to one which exists within reality.”

“Are you saying there is another power above all of you?”

“According to my copy, no, there is none greater than he. But, of course there is, however, I shall not speak their name.”

“Their name, does this mean there are many of them?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“They are a family and we are not good enough to be in their precious little group. Forget about them.

Yes, it angers me, because no one was supposed to be able to activate the mirrors once it leaves my control, but it has been shown, that some of those that belong to the other, they can activate the mirrors and possibly destroy my plan.”

Pierre then reasoned, “Are you saying there are humans that belong to a force or power greater than you or your copy, and one of them like the Friar is of this other power? Is this why you want him executed in the same manner as Christ?”

“Gregory, silence this impertinent fool, he asks too many questions.”

The entity stopped speaking from behind the curtain. And Gregory began to speak to Pierre of Tarentaise.

“I was stunned that he revealed so much at this time. This has never happened before. This reveals to me that the missing mirror poses a greater problem than we ever understood, plus it reveals his plan for you, Pierre, which I have never spoken about.

Based on what I have been instructed, no one can activate the mirrors except those who are closer to becoming, ‘what did he call them, Qubits?’ However, this is news to me that one belonging to another power can activate these mirrors, and this represents a greater threat than we have ever known.”

“Why do you think he revealed so much around me?” Pierre wondered.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Peter, he revealed to me his plans for you, for on the day of our Lord January 21st, 1276, you shall step in my shoes and become the next Pontiff. Pierre de Tarentaise, you shall be my successor and take upon the name of Pope Innocent V. You are going to be the first Dominican Order Friar to ever become Pope.”

“Holy Father, why would you exit so early?”

“My son, our lives are not truly our own, I created a great offence by allowing the mirror to be stolen, and therefore I have been judged to an early death. But you my son, be careful not to also offend or you may not last long either in the realm of Pontiffs.”

As the years rolled along, sure enough Pierre was made Pope Innocent V, Jan. 21st, 1276. He tried to follow in Gregory's footsteps, however, he made a grave error, he became more and more angered about the early death of his friend and mentor Gregory, and all along he knew it was due to Friar Giovanni, and what he had done.

He then began to make charges against Giovanni, and tried to unmask his identity and suddenly unbeknownst to anyone as to why, Pope Innocent V, died mysteriously in his office laying under a black drape, only five months into his reign as Pope Innocent V, he just died. No one ever knew why.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(22) Everything is changing what do we do?

During William's Lost Journal we learned that two members of the soul-group were not at the celebration feast when William had returned home, it is time now that we begin to learn who they were and where did they come from?

Beth had become pen pals so to speak with a man in India, his name was Sunilo. He worked in New Delhi. He was raised in Vishakhapatnam, which is located on the south-eastern border by the East Indian Ocean.

Often, he would write Beth and explain what life was like where he lived. He spoke often about New Delhi and its varied attractions and cultural history.

Sunilo was trained in auditing and worked with credit card applications. His job was to advance the people in India to become more prone to western technology to revamp its own economy.

He was very close to his family, which continue to live in the North East from where he was located, and he often took train rides on the weekends after having spent seventy to eighty grueling work hours slaving away.

It was his time of refreshment to go home over the weekend, a time to be renewed, even though it took at least 8-hours by train to get back home, those hours were some of the best hours he had due to his frantic work schedule.

It was his time to relax and meditate. It was his personal time to be with family and friends; and although their meeting together didn't last long, it was worth every moment on this weekend journeys.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Sunilo often sent me maps of the area allowing me to see the places and distances that were involved. One such map showed New Delhi and the distance of his travel to his home town.



He often sent me emails just before he left and then again when he made it home to be with his family. He dearly loved his family, because it brought back a time in India where family was more important than pretty much everything else, especially after being saturated with Western Culture.

However, as the times were changing, and India was moving ever so steadily towards western banking standards, this evolved into a vastly different economy for their world, which changed their ancient Indian culture dramatically.

Debt and mortgages were introduced into their lifestyle. And although it allowed many to buy new homes and new cars, it was a debt that was impossible to repay, and many became slaves to the system, just like those of the West.

This forced Sunilo to work horrid hours just to pay off debt, while having to sacrifice cultural mores. So, to say the least, his weekend trips were a memorable glimpse into the way things had once been.

It wasn't until I received the most frightening email I have ever seen, my good friend Sunilo emailed me after not being in touch for

Time-loop Chronicles 3

several months. He was writing to tell me he was going to visit his family over the weekend.

Okay, nothing much to be concerned about there until I read the next words he had written. He said that he would be flying home once again as he always has done.

I thought wait a second, he always told me he took the train. Flying was most definitely out of his budget. Now he is saying that he was heading to the Airport to fly out of New Delhi and then to his parents in Visakhapatnam.

I was confused, so I emailed him back and said, since when do you fly, you always take trains.

When I received the next email I began to tremble, something was very wrong. He responded by informing me that he had been flying for years back and forth to see his parents, and that taking a train was out of the question, because it was just too far. It would take most of the weekend and beyond just to go round-trip, and each leg was 30-40 hours one-way.

Okay, I knew either I was losing it, or he was playing a joke on me, because I knew it took less than 10-hours to travel by train. Instead of writing him back I decided to get one of my maps that I had been researching when I was thinking about taking a trip to India with Mark, where we would be able to meet my dear 'pen (email) pal' for the first time.

I then grabbed my diary where I had placed some important papers, and went to grab the map that I had placed within the pages, and there was nothing. I wondered, where did the map go? I placed it

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

in there to hide my bucket list. You know those things you have always wanted to do but never did.

Going to India was always one of those listed items, in fact it was number one my list. But the map was gone, nowhere to be found.

I looked around in my dresser and still nothing. I had found the map Sunilo had sent me via email after I printed it out it as still by my computer, yet I could not find the map where I was preparing my trip to Southern India to go to New Delhi, it simply was not there.

And you know what, either was the email of the map he sent, it was also gone, nowhere to be found. Even in my deleted emails in the trash folder, it was for all intents and purposes, gone, as if I never even got it. I am so happy I kept the printed version.

I then decided to go get a map of India online over the internet, trying to figure out what Sunilo was trying to tell me. Because it did not take no 30-40 hours on a train to get from New Delhi back to his parent's home.

I then opened a map online and I almost lost it. I immediately called Mark and asked him to come over, that something was terribly wrong.

I sat on the couch perspiring and talking to myself with incoherent words, waiting for Mark to appear. And within 20-minutes there was our special code knock of two raps, then three and then back to two again. I knew it was Mark.

I slowly walked to the door, opened it and said, "I need to talk with you."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark seeming a little disoriented said, “Yea, I figured it must be important, what’s wrong?”

“Mark, listen closely, and do not answer me until you know for sure how to respond.”

“Okay!”

“Mark, where is New Delhi located?”

Seemingly confused by the question. “Umm... India?”

“No, I don’t mean that, I mean where is it located within India?”

“Ah, let me think, well I am picturing it with my mind’s eye, it is down where the country sort of comes into a V shape...”

Beth interrupting Mark asked, “Please tell me, where in the country is it located?”

“Okay, Okay, let me think, Southern India? Is that what you mean?”

“Don’t guess, tell me where you remember it being!”

“Beth, what is all this about, New Delhi is in Southern India, I mean, isn’t that where our friends go every year? They fly in to New Delhi and then take a train trip Northwest to Goa while being in Southern India?”

“Yes! Yes! Yes! You’re right, that is more proof. They often flew to New Delhi and then took a train trip to the Northwestern shore of the

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Indian Ocean. They always talked about it. They said, most of the time they fly into New Delhi, except one time.

I remember them telling us they flew into Bombay, but the smog pollution and the heavy population was so bad it nearly killed them, and they said that they would never do that again.”

Mark still unsure what this was all about said, “Okay Beth, what are you trying to tell me?”

Before Beth answered she began to wonder, she went to the computer and plotted in Bombay as she had done many times before. Nothing came up on the map. She grumbled under her breath saying, “Oh come on this makes no sense.”

Mark then slowly walking to the computer pointed at the map where Bombay should be. He said, “There it is.”

Beth replied, “Where?”

“Right there!”

Beth looked back at him and said, “Look closer.”



Mark bent down a little more and saw that it didn't say Bombay but, Mumbai. He then shook his head back and forth in a stupor of

Time-loop Chronicles 3

amazement and said, “Well, maybe they call it that in India, it looks like it is Bombay, but it is pronounced differently, maybe in their language.”

“When has it ever been Mumbai,” Beth Grumbled, “I have looked at this map dozens of times, and it always has revealed Bombay, when have you ever seen it, as Mumbai?”

Beth continued... “Remember a couple of years ago when we were asked by our friends to come with them on their annual journey to India. We used to look at the map with them as they explained their entire itinerary, and it always showed Bombay?”

As Beth was searching for more data, she ran across an area that revealed that Bombay changed its name to Mumbai in 1995.

As Mark was staring at the map, he was sort of hearing her, but his mind was centered on something else, he then let out this gasp,

“What in the Hell?”

Beth startled, “What do you see?”

“No way, New Delhi is now in Northern India. No way Jose. That is not where New Delhi is located.”

Beth cried out, “This is what I am talking about, India has done a complete transformation, places have changed, cities moved, millions are now somewhere else.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror



When Sunilo used to write he explained to me that Old Delhi used to be Northern India, but it changed during the trade alliances with England. Delhi left Northern Indian and settled in Southern India where it became New Delhi, long ago. But look it is no longer there, it is back in the north.

This is crazy, it is not possible. How could something be this apparent and no one else sees it but us?" Beth Cringed.

Mark then pointed something out, "Look, New Delhi is above Nepal, it is further north and that just aint possible. How did this happen?

Beth responded, Yea I know, this is weird, this aint right. We were just looking at the map a few months ago in preparation of a possible trip. We even outlined our entire trip and destination, etc."

Mark interjected, "Yea, where is all that, didn't you keep it?"

"I thought I did, it was in my diary, but it is missing, however I still had the picture Sunilo sent where it plainly shows New Delhi south

Time-loop Chronicles 3

around the region of Hyderabad. I am not sure why one thing is missing but not the other. None of this makes any sense.”

“What did Sunilo reveal when you told him about this strange change?”

“Are you crazy Mark, how can I tell the guy that his entire world flip flopped, He obviously doesn’t know it or else he would have told me.”

“Mark wondered, “Should we inform anyone else about this?”

“Sure, let’s just pin a sign on our rear ends that says, biggest goofballs in the world! Come on, if no one is saying anything that means either no one knows, or if they do they are not talkin’.”

“But this is too huge, we can’t just remain silent.”

“What do you propose that we do?”

“First thing that comes to mind is maybe we should check the map of the world to see if there is anything else out of place, it wouldn’t have been just India, right?”

“Good point, maybe we should check into everything and find out what has happened, because we know that something beyond weird has transformed our world.”

“Yea, I mean, YEA! How could we be this messed up after even combing this entire area to add to our route for a possible excursion to India? We were not smoking something wacky, were we?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Agree, for something this big there must be other things that have changed, but why, why did this happen, or why is any of it happening?”

At that moment Mark had a memory flash as if something triggered a feeling of something that once happened, like Déjà vu or something like that.

Mark looking a little freaked momentarily paused and then spoke these words, “My God, what was that?”

Beth longing to know, quipped, “What? Did something happen?”

“I am not sure, I had this memory thing occur, or at least this is what it felt like.”

“What memory?”

“This is silly, but a memory came into me saying, “Remember Isaiah 11.”

“What does that mean?”

“Heck if I know? But I think it had something to do with the regression. So much of what happened during the regression I have misplaced it in memory, I know it was all very important I just cannot recall it.”

Beth replied, “Sadly, you did not speak much during the regression, so I am of no help either, but we have a possible clue.”

“What is that?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Well, Isaiah 11, for one!”

“Oh, sorry... my mind is in a fog, it was as if my inner soul had just been clogged up or something, as if there was someone else nearby me or something present within me.”

Beth then walked away to seek for the family Bible, when she found it, she opened Isaiah 11. She began to read the first few verses and said, “Nope, not getting it, nothing here seems to be helping.”

She then continued to read and then she saw verse 6. “Wait, wait a minute, something is not right here, I have heard of this verse before, and this is not how it goes.”

“What is it?”

“It says a Wolf shall... hold it, you read it!”

She hands the bible to Mark and he begins to read it.

“The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them.”

“Oh my!” Mark responds.

“Yea, you see it too?”

Mark then whispers under his breath, “Did I do this?”

Beth wondering if Mark was losing it, responded, “What are you talking about?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“That memory I had, it has to do with the Lion shall dwell with the Lamb.”

Beth screamed, “Yea that’s it, that is what is wrong, it was the lion that dwelled with the lamb not some stupid wolf.”

Mark still somewhat out of phase replied, “It worked, I changed the verse and it worked, it is now a different verse but somehow we have retained the memory of the original verse.”

“What do you mean you changed it, how is that possible?”

Mark’s memory faded quickly, and the deep inner feeling began to leave also.

“I don’t know Beth, something weird just happened. And I think someone is trying to tell us to look closely for more changes, cause, things have reformed, but somehow our memories were not affected by the change, and as strange as this may seem I might have had something to do with it.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(23) Giovanni, the Abbot and the Monk are Executed.

Under the authority of the Pope often countries acquiesced to that authority if there was a need to align with the Vatican. Edward the 1st, of England came into a secret deal with France's King Phillip III, and thereby united with the Vatican during this time, via the Holy Roman Empire.

There was a contingent of military personnel located in St. Sernin, and when the message had been relayed, the military regiment of Toulouse immediately pursued Friar Giovanni.

Their orders were to place Giovanni in prison under heavy protection until the Vatican guard and the four chosen Monks would finally arrive.

As Giovanni was placed under arrest they also went after anyone who was seen with him, and placed them under arrest also. Therefore, a surprised Abbot in St Sernin, was chained and taken away along with Giovanni as they had been seen together, and both were thrown into a horrible prison chamber.

The Abbot was very confused, he didn't even know Friar Giovanni, yet was unable to prevent his imprisonment. As they carried the Abbot away, he was screaming in pain as his arms were pinned back by a 4" block of wood tied in rope, which brought upon him great agony.

He continued to plead with the French guards claiming his absolute innocence. The Abbot called out to Friar Giovanni and pleaded with him to explain that they did not know each other.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

However, Friar Giovanni was having to deal with his own demons at this moment in time. He failed to relieve the concerns of the Abbot by claiming his innocence also.

Both were thrown into the dark cell as their arms were eventually freed, but they were left with nothing but their morbid sense of futility. They pondered in their mind how this was going to end, but there was no relief of answers to their ignominy. They were not sure how long they would have to wait inside this cell of darkness.

A couple of days went by, and they were comforted with very little. Bread and water was their diet along with what protein was added with the worms and flies that filled their province.

Rats scurried all around, and the only light they had was a small opening towards the loft above.

Finally, after a couple of more days of being enslaved within their morbid environment, they began to hear sounds coming from the outer wall and voices could be heard yelling, "The Vatican Guard is here, the Vatican Guard is here."

The Abbot having a sense of relief said, "Maybe now someone will listen to me, that I am guiltless of all crimes, and they have arrested the wrong person."

Giovanni replied, "I feel I will not be so fortunate, for they are here for me."

The guards made it to the door, and opened it, and they approached Friar Giovanni, and along with the guards were four Monks who had also been of the twelve.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Friar Giovanni immediately knew he was in deep trouble, and the Monks alerted the guards to the fact that this was their thief.

When the Monks looked upon the Abbot they were unsure why he was arrested, but they asked him how he knew Friar Giovanni. He explained, "I had been in the Abbey and I awakened from a sleep, and he was standing there, I knew not from where he came from nor who he might have been."

One of the Monks looked over at Giovanni and said, "Are the words he speaks accurate?"

Th Friar simply said, "I know him not, we had just met after his awakening, and that is all he knows."

It was then the guards were motioned out by the Monks, and they all left. What the Monks didn't understand was that the guards were given the orders of execution from the Vatican of not only Giovanni, but anyone connected to him. As well as execution of the Monks, if they fail to retrieve the strange artifact.

The Monks had to retrieve the missing mirror, or else. As the monks left the prison cell they began to speak with the locals asking them what they had seen, and if they had seen Giovanni holding a strange object.

No one seemed to know anything. As they continued to seek out for more information, at that moment one of the Monks spotted the Monk who had been on the journey with Friar Giovanni as they were traveling to Toulouse. They immediately recognized him as the Monk who had been the 12th mirror operator prior to the Friar.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

The traveling Monk was stunned to see his four compadres approaching, he had no idea why they were there, but he believed that this raucous could not have had anything dealing with him.

As the four monks approached him they were inquisitive as why he had been in Toulouse, the very place they located the Friar. They asked, "What has brought you to this area, do you know Friar Giovanni?"

The question caught the Monk off guard, he knew immediately that something was wrong, but he didn't feel it had anything to with him. He then replied, "I met the Friar upon my journey to Toulouse, and we spoke."

"Did the Friar have one of our mirrors?"

"No, why would he have one of the mirrors, they cannot be removed from the Vatican. How would he even have one?"

"Did the Friar speak to you at all during this journey about what he was doing in the Vatican?"

The Monk replied, "What 'he' was doing in the Vatican?"

Emphasizing the word 'HE' in the Vatican, this was a shock to the traveling companion.

The Monk knew something was wrong, because the Friar never spoke of this, the Monk had told the Friar what he had been doing. This is when the traveling Monk realized, the thief was Friar Giovanni, and now he believes that he was set up in a trap.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

It was then the Guards that were standing by arrested the Monk also, even at the protest of the four messengers. They said, “We do not believe he needs to be arrested because he knows not where the mirror is.”

“The prisoner cried out while they were strapping his arms behind his back, “I saw no mirror, I would have fled if I saw that thing, I am innocent.”

The guards were not listening, they took him away and the messenger monks decided we need to locate the mirror, promptly.

The four of them searched everywhere around town as they split up in all directions in the attempt to locate the missing mirror. What they were hoping for is wherever the mirror was that it would be activated while they were there, or else finding it would be like seeking for a needle in a haystack.

They attempted several times to locate the mirror, by turning their mirrors on and then asking where the lost mirror was, but nothing was revealed. They had no idea where the mirror was or if it was even inside the town.

Finally, one of the guards said, we are getting impatient, have you accessed the missing artifact. At this point it would have been wise if the messenger simply said yes, because the guards knew not what they were looking for.

However, the four of them each answered on their own, saying we have not found what we have been seeking for.

The guard turned around to look at two of the other guards standing by, yet no words were spoken. They then all turned towards

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

the messenger Monks, and the lead guard said, "You have done all that you can do, let's move onward."

The four messengers agreed, and said, "We must return."

As the Monk turned to his companions the first guard walked up and thrust his sword into the Monk's back and pulled it out as quickly as he had thrust. The shock upon the Monks face was all too real when his companions demanded to know what was happening.

As the first Monk hit the ground in pain, blood spilling everywhere, the guards in unison repeated the process with the other three, and there they left them in pain and blood and they slowly faded away from their human temple.

As the guards prepared to walk away, they retrieved the four mirrors from the messengers and smashed them on rocks. They had known that the strange artifact they were holding must be what had to be destroyed. The mirrors were destroyed and then thrown on the bodies of the monks.

The guards then called over to two men standing aside awaiting orders. The two men were standing next to a pile of wood that was obviously prepared for such an event, and they picked up some of the pieces and threw them on the bodies as they laid the bodies on top of one another.

One of the men began using some flint and steel and striking them above the body caught the clothing on fire. The four messenger monks were set aflame as the orders were given, and they perished that very day.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The guards returned to the prison cell. And they escorted the three men, Friar Giovanni, the Abbot of St. Sernin, and the Monk Giovanni met on his journey.

They were marched into the streets where the other guardsmen had placed three stakes set upon larger stakes. All three men were nailed to the stakes by their arms, and tied to the stake with rope. They then nailed their feet into the longer stake which had been attached to the smaller one, in the form of a “T”, and the three were crying for dear life and begging for mercy.

The guards showed no mercy as the event was being seen from all the towns people in the center square. Sadly, they were all yelling in unison, ‘crucify them, crucify them.’ It was like pages ripped out of another story and the act was being repeated.

The Monk was on the Left, the Abbot was in the middle due to this being his town, he was set up as the most notable among the three and Friar Giovanni was on the right whom nobody had known.

Their stakes which their bodies were fastened to, were then raised up by seven guards and they lowered these stakes with the bodies into a deep three-foot hole, and the three of them slowly began to die.

The older, the Abbot, could not handle the pain and died of a heart attack while being staked up. The other two writhing in pain, continued to die a slow death.

It was then the Abbot appeared to have come back alive, and Giovanni’s memory was activated, and the pain left him. The Abbot who had been William now became Walter, as Walter entered the body of the Abbot, Giovanni was reminded when Walter said, “I told you I

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

would never leave you or forsake you. Suffering my son is the only way for the soul-mind to awaken that it has been betrayed, one who lives an easy life never awakens.”

Giovanni responded, “Lord have you come to help me, and take me back home?”

“No, my son, I have simply come to assist you in your time of need. Your life in this world is an illusion of the mind, so is your pain, I have removed all your pain, and soon you will be able to remove yourself from the prison of your mind, and this very day you shall be with me in Paradise.”

The Monk on the other side was confused as his pain remained. He could not understand what was happening or why. He just complained that he was totally innocent, and he should not have to suffer like this.

“Walter then replied to the Monk and said, “No one is innocent my son, it just takes some longer to realize who they are and where they came from.”

Immediately the pain was removed also from the Monk and then he had a flash memory within his mind that he was of the future. And he witnessed this most inspiring scene while he was standing on a beach looking to the sea, he then spoke these last words before his soul-mind was removed.

“My name is Sunilo, and I am from the future.”

Upon speaking those very words, the Monk gave up the ghost and died.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Then Giovanni said with great elation, “My Lord where do I go now? And what were those strange words the Monk spoke?”

“The Monk had been given a great blessing to see that his life will once again be restored, and he will live again in the future. You shall meet this Monk again, but you will not be of the same timeline. And as for you my son, you are already there, just concentrate and your memory will be returned.”

When Giovanni began to concentrate everything began to fade and his consciousness blacked out; Giovanni di Fianza had indeed passed on. A term that we use so lightly.

PASSED ON... But to where?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(24) Marie's Dream

As I fell asleep this voice began to speak to me, as if coming from inside my head. It was a loving voice and yet stern. I felt compassion but also empathy for our cause. I felt like I was a guinea pig being used as a test agent for some evil conspiracy.

All these things were finding doorways into my emotions as the voice continued.

“My child, you have been chosen to unveil the mystery of the ages, and to remove the dismal tyranny of the mind and replace it with truth, so that you can share it with all.”

Marie then looked at herself in a mirror, as she was wearing clothing of another time and age, everything around her was ancient. She felt like she was cast as part of scene in a movie.

The voice continued. “Your lives are all fabrications within a simulation that continues to repeat over again. It is likened unto a never-ending story. And yet only the awakened can begin to recall the constant torment the soul has gone through.

During the ancient times a people were called and chosen, and they were given the cyclical plan of death, but they were told it was the plan of life. All your life at this period of time you have lived under these statutes and ordinances and have believed that these things were good, holy and true.

Remember, the words I speak to you this day from within your mind, seemingly coming from a dream, but this is no dream, it is your memory, for I have not come to you this day, I came to you when these things were part of your very existence, when you were about to meet

Time-loop Chronicles 3

a very special man that would change your life forever. But he is not coming to continue the plan of death, he is coming to reveal life.

This plan which evolved around special Holy days was given to them to share down from generation to generation and yet nary a soul could fathom its mystery.

Over the ages this plan was changed to harmonize with the new referendum, what you might call Christmas and Easter, and Halloween all had their original concepts from this ancient script, before it transformed into a new era.

Today, my child, I shall unveil the mystery of death and teach you how that all life is a cyclical journey. This ancient group were given six holy day seasons. I remind you that the number “6” is the number of man. You have been partaking in these rituals, but now I come with warning.

These six events as you well know are called,

1. The Feast of unleavened bread. **Passover** - Seven days you shall eat unleavened bread. On the first day you shall remove leaven from your houses. For whoever eats leavened bread from the first day until the seventh day, that person shall be cut off from Israel.
2. The Feast of Pentecost - **Shavu'ot**- You shall count for yourselves -- from the day after the Shabbat, from the day when you bring the Omer of the waving -- seven Shabbats, they shall be complete. Until the day after the seventh sabbath you shall count, fifty days... it is an eternal decree in your dwelling places for your generations.
3. The Feast of Trumpets-**Rosh Hashanah**
4. The Feast of Atonement-**Yom Kippur**- ...In the seventh month, on the tenth day of the month, you shall afflict your souls, and you shall not do any work ... For on that day he shall provide

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

atonement for you to cleanse you from all your sins before the LORD

5. The Feast of Tabernacles-**Sukkot** is the last of the Shalosh R'galim (three pilgrimage festivals). Like Passover and Shavu'ot, Sukkot has a dual significance: historical and agricultural. Historically, Sukkot commemorates the forty-year period during which the children of Israel were wandering in the desert, living in temporary shelters. Agriculturally, Sukkot is a harvest festival and is sometimes referred to as Chag Ha-Asif (in Hebrew), the Festival of Ingathering.
- 6.
7. The Feast of the Last great day or the day of Judgment- **Shemini Atzeret**- on the eighth day, there shall be a holy convocation for you.

Each of these days were honored as Holy times of the year, the entire path of humanity was written in scroll as to how they have been trapped and forever remain in prison.

Today, I must reveal the plan so that you can escape the trap. It is called the entrapment of the seeds. It is called the seasons of hell.

There is a path humanity is on that continues to repeat, nothing is new under the sun. A plan so vile because it appears good, and yet, it is saturated with evil intent.

The plan begins in the Spring time of life, the beginning of life itself. This is when all seeds are planted to begin the process. The process continues forever even though it is cyclical, because the seeds will always remain trapped until the use of the correct frequency code that must be activated, which can help remove one from this insidious plot.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

This frequency is special, and is only given to those that show signs of change, that are willing to finally break through the dark night of the soul.

The first of these days represent how the soul of the seeds are planted into the earth, yet still buried unto death. This is the revelation of how they are forever asleep.

Their earthly grave is their tormentor, it is the illusion of life and death. This season is called the Days of Unleavened bread and it represents the soul having no awareness.

Leavening represented sin, as you so well know, when one was unleavened, they were without sin. This is known as the period of between life and death, representing one that has yet to spring forth from their earthly grave. It represents the womb before birth.

It reveals how sin is not accounted unto the soul during the time they are planted in the earth, or earthbound. It represents how all souls are ignorant of their situation. It established the concept of a soul when it is in the womb of their mother, before they are born, having done no good or evil. Therefore, they are unleavened. And for seven days representing the time of fulfillment, they are buried as seeds in the birth canal.

The Spring time represents the newness of life while being buried in death. It represents the children of the Father and Mother who came to this earth due to trickery and deception and now are paying their toll for their faulty choice, by constantly being reborn, which is called the Matrix, which comes from Matrical, or child within the mother.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

What is not revealed is that another seed was also planted, the one called, Lucifer, had planted his own seed into the earth also, and side by side both seeds would become humanity.

As the seeds go through their death process eventually like all seeds they begin to appear above the ground as they are growing. Spring then gives way unto Summer. Which is then marked by the second season called, the Pentecost, which simply means 50th. It is the time of the awakening, when the seeds begin to show forth fruits of their growth in what is called the First fruits.

This is when the growth can now be witnessed, and then for the summer months the first-fruits begin their travail through trial and error, good and evil, wherewith all must choose.

But it doesn't end there, this is also the time where the seed of Lucifer also begins to grow side by side and as it was once taught about the parable of the fig tree. The true seeds are the figs, and the false seeds are the leaves covering over the figs.

During this period, both seeds must intermingle, yet the true seeds are limited as there is only few comparably, whereas the false seeds grow beyond number, incalculable. They fill the entire earth during the summer months as cloned replicated seeds.

Finally, during the Fall season this is when travail and war begins. This is the period known today as the Revelation. It is called the Feast of Trumpets, when the seals of death are broken, and humanity is culled.

After this period of tribulation is when death rears its ugly head and brings all back to the grave again waiting for their time of rebirth, it is known as the Atonement, when humanity is brought back to their god as one.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Notice my child in your Holy books of seventy it was shown, *'The sorrows of a travailing woman shall come upon him: he is an unwise son; for he should not stay long in the place of the breaking forth of children. I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction: repentance shall be hidden from mine eyes.'*

Notice my child it was always there in your holy books that death returns to life via the birth. The place where he should not stay long is the afterlife. He ransoms the child who had died previously by bringing them back through the womb of a different Mother. My child you have lived before, many times, and you have died many times, and not once were you removed from this prison. For this is the true meaning of your Holy Days.

When one dies, they remain a short time until they are ransomed back into life by being reborn. This is symbolized by the ancient verse, that dust art thou and dust shall thou return. Its states when the body dies, the soul then returns to god who had sent them, this is the Atonement. Then that same god ransoms them back unto birth, thus revealing, returning to earth and being buried into death under the illusion of life.

Now my child I come to you with the true holy day, the true plan of life. This is also the time called the Harvest, where those who belong to the Father and Mother, who are activated and then released from the grave of error, allowing them to return home and never having to come back to this error again.

However, those who are not yet activated must be toiled under the earth again as servants to the grave. Meaning they must 'toil' again lifetime after lifetime as they serve Lucifer the god of the cosmos.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Something happens during this Fall season that few are aware. This is because humanity is ignorant of the plan of Lucifer. How that all are simply being recycled from death to life and back to death repeatedly.

Therefore, the Fall season is separated into two different categories. Those who are removed from Lucifer and allowed to return home versus those who remained trapped in his cage, and must be recycled.

Lucifer calls it the Kingdom of God on Earth. It lasts for 1080-years, this is the period known as the Time-Loop. After the Atonement the souls are recycled through a loop, where they had been in the future they must now return unto the past. But is it truly a new Kingdom? Is it a spiritual renewal? Or is it back to the same old illusion?

The 5th season is called the Feast of Tabernacles or what was called the feast of Booths, it illustrates how humanity are souls who live in simulated houses. These houses are called Tabernacles, or Avatar temples. This seven-day feast represents the Kingdom of Lucifer, that which lasts for one-thousand-years, from the past unto the future and then repeats.

It is the very plan itself. For one-thousand years, souls exist within human bodies or physical tabernacles, under the laws and tutelage of Lucifer, whom rules the earth in stealth from above. My child you have seen their ships flying to and fro.

Then after the Kingdom, at the time of the end of the one-thousand-years, Sol Malum releases his other half from the prison of time, the Diabolis, the one mankind has known as, Satan the Devil, the one who is locked within his own mirror.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

He is then released for the last portion of 80-100 years, this is the time when world wars break out, drastic changes occur, and humanity is led into great deception and moral depravity. And at the same time technological advances are supreme revealing that at one time those who belonged to the realms before this fabricated world existed, were far advanced until the prison of time was created.

Even the Bible reveals this plan saying, the Kingdom shall last for 1000-years and then afterwards Satan is released for a little season, this is the 80-100 years, coming from his hell, to deceive the whole earth once again.

Why would any benevolent caretaker who saves the world for 1000-years, release the devil so that he can deceive the whole world again? This is mindlessness. It is the repetitive Time-Loop called hell.

It is all part of the plan. This is how it has happened recurrently, and most souls never figure it out. This release of the devil occurs as the last of the six-feast seasons and it is tied right into the feast of Tabernacles, as the last day, and it is called the Day of Judgement, or the judgment of man, as #6. This is when souls are tried like nothing ever before from a spiritual standpoint, and most fail the test.

What we are witnessing here is a time-loop, wherewith, the feast of unleavened bread is those that are sent back to earth under bondage being buried unto the illusion of death. Then there is the Pentecost when the seeds begin to identify who they truly are as they grow out from within the earth. Then great destruction occurs in the day of Trumpets, and then finally death in the Atonement.

Then it is replicated through the last two as Tabernacles and the great judgment.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

It is then we enter what is called the Winter season, this is the time when the Sun begins its death process where it dies and three days and three nights later the sun is resurrected again, and all sins are forgiven unto mankind, leading them back into the Spring season of the days of unleavened bread, where all sin has vanished, so then all can be reborn and go through the process again, seemingly being renewed.

My child this is the plan that the world is cursed under. This is the diabolical plot that has kept the world in darkness.

And until the correct frequency code is given to restore the soul back unto life and remove them from death, this will be the fate of humanity for all eternity.”

As Marie gained her composure being stunned beyond belief as to what she had heard, she speaks, “My Lord, how can one access the code to become free?”

Marie slowly began to awaken from this amazing dream, the last words she heard did not make sense. She heard the voice say, “**Mary** my beloved, you are the **ONE!**”

She noticed that this voice called her Mary, which seemed odd, and that the term ‘ONE’ was emphasized also, it said, Mary, you are the ONE to point to six days of hell, and you must be activated.

Marie awakened vividly remembering the dream that she had, but the thing that most bothered her was she could not understand what the voice was saying about breaking free.

She then started doodling on a notepad, she had been mesmerized by the voice saying the one that points to the six. She kept

Time-loop Chronicles 3

doodling, over and over trying to make sense of it, until she felt that she had the answer.

“Activate 1.6”

Marie then left her home and sought out to meet Beth to explain what had happened. And then it hit her, “Why did this voice call me Mary, and why did he say I was the One?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(25) Giovanni and Mark Rejoin Together

Memory is a very elusive thing, one moment it is there and another moment in time, it simply vanishes, leaving one frustrated.

But for Mark everything began to return to him as a long-lost soul-connection reunited within. And the two became one.

For the first time since the regression that took Mark back nearly 800-years into a past life, the memory of the Serpentine's Mirror began to plague his memory.

At first it did not make a whole lot of sense, but as he meditated on it, everything started coming back to him in a flash. Memories of being back in the medieval times, serving in the Vatican and working with the strangest artifact anyone could have ever imagined.

It was not so strange concerning the time Mark was living in today, as technology had advanced via incredible speeds. Yet even with all our advanced technology no one had ever seen something as implausible as this Mirror.

Mark began to remember that he wanted to apprehend this special mirror, and then bury it somewhere to retrieve it later. All these memories were coming back. He began to recall being out on the seas for days on end, fleeing from those who desired to arrest him.

It was then that the memory creating sadness and Mark reminisced drowning at sea. This alarmed his soul in such a way, that finally the name Giovanni entered his thoughts. He knew deep down who this was, but for some reason it was not clear, yet.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The regression was all coming back to him, everything that happened. He remembered entering the body of Friar Giovanni, and how he convinced him to steal the mirror and flee.

His thoughts began to trouble him as he realized it was not Mark that who had drowned in the sea; it was Giovanni, an innocent Friar that Mark had never consciously known before.

Then his thoughts brought him to the revelation, that he was indeed Giovanni. That this was a past life. And due to this interaction, he brought an early end to the Friar's life.

As he continued to think about this, he began to feel sadness grow in his heart. He wondered, "What did I do, a simple regression may have caused great damage to a soul?"

Again, his thoughts troubled him, and he continued pondering what happened to the timeline of Giovanni, if he died prematurely due to this event; did it cause massive changes in the timeline? Did it cause massive change to the world?

Immediately the Mirror came back into his thoughts, and he remembered what this mirror was and what it could do. And then the thoughts of Giovanni began to merge with his own as if the two were always together.

Everything came back, the memory of dying and entering the after-life, how Mark spoke with William and Giovanni spoke with Walter, yet it was as if both had done this together at the same time being the same exact event, it is very hard to explain.

Suddenly the amazing realization entered Mark that Giovanni upon drowning was taken into the next realm where Walter taught him

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

amazing things. Mark then realized that he was the beneficiary of everything Giovanni had become aware of, yet his memory was sealed until the time of the end when it would all be revealed.

Mark also remembered being told that he would finish his dad's journal. But then a strange foreign memory entered his thoughts that he had not been aware of, in that he was to write four more very important books and share them with the true children of the divine.

This knowledge came during the time Walter was teaching Giovanni, and that all those memories were removed from Giovanni until the time was right. Those very feelings and memories were now all coming back. And Mark was recalling the lost secrets.

Everything was coming back to Mark, all of it as if they were long lost hidden memories sealed behind a curtain that had just been opened.

Mark now knows what he must share with the world, and now he knows his place in history dealing with this very special soul-group.

Suddenly, Mark winced, and then a voice from within spoke. However, Mark didn't reveal what was said, but he did reveal what he needed to do.

Immediately Mark called up Marie on the phone, "Marie, this is Mark, I think our time has come, do you want to take a trip?"

Marie responded with abated breath and anxious to discover what Mark was asking. "Take a Trip, Where?"

"We are going to Southern France!"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Why?”

“Cause, I know where the mirror is...” He emphasized it again “I know where the mirror is...”

Marie cautiously asked, “What Mirror?”

“The Mirror you were chosen to retrieve... Uh, never mind, get a hold of your friend Matthias in Marseilles, cause, we are about to take a journey of a lifetime.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(26) Beth goes to India

Marie's dream continues to haunt her, as she tries to cope with everyday life. She pondered daily what the voice had told her in the vision.

She became obsessed, she kept thinking about the frequency code and what it could mean. It had to have some deeper meaning beyond the idea of simply knowing about it. She felt it was now her destiny to find the clues to the code.

The idea that humanities fate is scripted was something she could no longer handle. To believe our lives are no more than rats caught in a maze, was a little too much for her to digest.

When Mark had told her that they were going to Southern France, she was thrilled, because her dream continued to make her wonder who she might have been, and for some reason, southern France made a lot of sense to her.

As Mark and Marie were making their plans he then called a friend in Marseilles to ask him if they could stay with him on their journey. Obviously, they both wanted Beth to come with them. But Beth was dealing with another issue, that of Sunilo.

Beth had received a call from Sunilo who was in a panic. He told her that he was having nightmares, and that when she asked him in her last email certain questions he began to have a panic attack.

Sunilo had told her that he was having dreams continually, and he said, the nightmares were revealing that he was living in another world in another area. He could not understand it. None of it made sense, but he was witnessing his life in some other dimension.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

He became frightened to the extent he sent a round trip airline ticket so that Beth could come to India and talk with him because he had been completely freaked out.

Beth decided to go, and she told Marie and Mark that she would change her return ticket and fly back to France to meet them after she meets with Sunilo.

The three of them felt that was a good plan. Beth then flew to India while Mark and Marie finalized their plans to go to France.

When Beth flew into Indira Gandhi International Airport, she finally met her email pen pal friend live, and in person. Sunilo was a kind man, never been married, but had a sense of things that were of a higher order.

Beth was fascinated by him because he was deeply spiritual. His family was Hindu, but Sunilo was able to look beyond religious constructs into a wider valley of beliefs. And in so doing he felt as if he belonged to a different order of things.

When the two of them left the airport, and got into a cab, Sunilo began talking about a dream he had the night before. He said you are going to find this strange because I think it was about your boyfriend Mark, who you have written extensively about.

He revealed in his dream that he was walking in a place that seemed like a desert terrain. He met this boy, maybe about 15-years old, he had black hair, it was cut in a way where it completely covered his ears all around his head while wearing a hair band.

And it parted in the middle, so the hair didn't fly in his face. As he met the young boy he asked him, what are you doing here. The young

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

lad was moving sheep from one place to another, he had like twelve sheep with him, but he was all by himself.

When asked what he was doing, the young lad said, I am about my Master's business of leading sheep from one town to another. He then realized this boy's name was John, and he asked, who is your Master.

The young lad said, "He is our spiritual teacher, he has us take young sheep after lambing where they can still produce milk, and we help people from city to city providing them with the nourishment of lamb's milk.

Our teacher says that we must serve others, therefore we help ourselves by helping them."

Sunilo continues to explain the dream to Beth in that he became good friends with this young lad. And they spent a lot of time together and he learned of the ways of these people.

Sunilo continued, "I believe I was talking to John the Disciple of Christ, I had no idea that he was that young, he was just a kid."

He went on to say that, "The last thing I remembered in the dream was, I asked John, may I be of some service to you?" The young John replied with these mysterious words in return.

"Your service is not needed now, but sometime in the future it may well be that it will be desirable." He then ended by saying these words, "May all rejoin kinfolk in such joyful outcry heard now."

Beth then asked, "Why would you think Mark was important to this dream of yours."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“I didn’t at first, it never occurred to me. But the last words John said kept haunting me because they didn’t make sense.”

You mean, “May all rejoin kinfolk in such joyful outcry heard now.”

“Yes, I thought about this repeatedly, and it never made sense. What kinfolk? What joy? Whose outcry? I wrote it down and looked at it continually until I saw something.”

“What was that Sunilo?”

“Look at the words, I think it is an acronym.”

“What do you mean?”

“Look at it, each letter is revealing a word, may all rejoin Kinfolk, put it together... M.A.R.K. Then it says, ‘in such’, or IS – I.S. Now look closely at the final words, joyful, outcry, heard, now. Or JOHN, J.O.H.N.

It is saying, Mark is John. What else could it mean?”

“Do you think it is referring to my Mark.”

“I don’t know, but I had this dream right before you got here. And the only Mark I can think of is your Mark.”

“Very strange!”

Sunilo then continued with his dream. But first they needed to get Beth set up in her hotel room. Quickly the cab brought them to the hotel within about 15-minutes from the airport where Beth would be staying at, ‘the Radisson Blu Plaza Delhi Airport.’

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

As she claimed her room in the Lobby at the front desk, they finally took the elevator-lift to the third floor where she would be staying. Sunilo helped carry her luggage and as she settled in, the two of them returned to one of the many restaurants located within the hotel called, the Great Kabab Factory.

Sunilo recommended the Galouti Kabab made of finely minced lamb with Indian spices, cooked on Mahi Tawa. They both ordered the same, and the food came quickly, and it was awesome.

During this time Sunilo asked Beth, "Do you remember asking me why I took the plane to visit my parents, and not a train?"

"Yes, in fact it is one of those things I want to talk to you about because something very strange is going on."

"The reason I wanted you to come visit with me, was I needed to show you something."

"Sure, by all means, show me." Beth responded.

Sunilo grabbed something out of his pocket, and he looked at it again and shook his head back and forth as if it did not make sense, and then he slowly handed it to Beth. He told her, "It is a train ticket from New Delhi to Visakhapatnam, where my parents live."

"Okay, so?"

"Beth, I do not usually take trains to my parents, I fly, it is simply too far. So, where did this train ticket come from?"

"Where did you find it?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

"I found it in a pocket of my shirt I wear when I visit my parents."

"So, you are saying you never took a train to visit them?"

"It would not be practical, it takes 33-hours one way.

"Well that would be strange."

"Beth the problem is not having the ticket, the problem is, the time stamp."

"Where is it, I can't find it on the ticket?"

"Look on the front down at the bottom, it is dated, (SCH DEP 5:05 SCH ARR 14:22) It shows the time of departing from New Delhi and the time when the train will arrive at the depot in Visakhapatnam. It revealed, 5:05 AM Saturday morning it departs from New Delhi, and at 2:22PM Saturday it arrives at Visakhapatnam."

"Okay!"

"But this is not possible."

Maybe it was mistake. Maybe it meant it arrived on Sunday at 2:22PM how long would that be?"

"Oh, I would say about, 33 hours. Yes, you're right it would fit, but!"

Beth jumped in, "Maybe that was the mistake then?"

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"I wondered also if it was a mistake, the problem is, I have written in my own handwriting on the back of the ticket the same times for departure and arrival and it is Saturday, only Saturday.

Secondly, like I told you, I don't take trains often from New Delhi to go back home unless I have a break for a couple of weeks, and I did take a train a couple of years ago during a break."

"That should explain it then."

"Yea, but it doesn't."

"Why?"

"Because the date of Departure and arrival is also on the ticket, notice the date, 21-09-2013, this is September 21st, 2013, which falls on a Saturday. The problem is, Saturday, September 21st, 2013 I was in Nepal with some friends."

Sunilo dug into his other pocket and took out a post card that he had sent back to himself, and on it was a picture of the place where he stayed in Nepal and it was dated, 21-09-2013.

"Beth, I never went home that weekend. I went to Nepal for an entire week. We didn't get back until Friday, the 27th. So, I decided to take the ticket to the train depot and asked them to search to verify the legitimacy of the ticket.

You see each ticket is stamped with a number code, a PNR NO. They can back track and find where this ticket was validated and when."

"So, what happened?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Are you ready?”

“I guess!”

“The ticket doesn’t exist; the number code is not validated.”

“Did the people at the depot have anything to say about it?”

“Yea, they said something that made my hair stand on end. They said, the time stamp and the departure and arrival could not have happened unless this train departed somewhere south of Hyderabad. But that is not possible since New Delhi is not around that area.”

Beth then took a couple breaths and decided to tell Sunilo what she discovered, but he interrupted her.

“Beth, that is not all, the man at the depot told me that he had a dream a vivid dream that he was a child, and in it, he was living in New Delhi located in Southern India. He said he was sure that is where it was. Then he woke up and voila New Delhi was Northern India again., But it was so vivid and real he thought it was true.”

“Then could this have explained it all?” Beth not knowing what to say.

“That’s the problem, it doesn’t explain anything, because I have been having dreams where I am living in a different place as if I do not belong in this world, but belong in another. I can’t explain it, but it was so frightening I wanted you to come to India and speak with me in person, to make absolutely sure I am not losing my mind.”

Beth allowed for a minute or so to think about this, and she began to tell Sunilo what she had discovered.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"Sunilo, you are not losing your mind, you might have lost your world though. We have been writing each other now for years correct?"

"Yes!"

And during our email exchanges you have told me a lot of different things about your life here in India. And some of those exchanges we have had, have now been contradicted."

"What do you mean?"

"Do you have any recollection of telling me that when you used to visit your parents in Visakhapatnam on the weekends, that you always took a train?"

"But I don't take the train!"

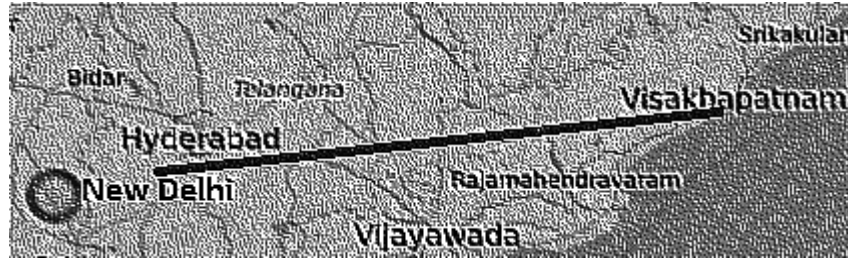
"Yes, I can see that now, but this is what you use to tell me in the emails, and you also told me it took good 8-hours on a train to travel home."

"Why would I say that, it is not true?"

"So, you do not remember ever telling me this, then do you remembered emailing 'this' to me?"

Beth grabbed something out of her purse and handed him the map of India,

Time-loop Chronicles 3



Sunilo looked as if he had seen a ghost, he then responded, “This is not possible.”

“This is what you sent me, but there is more, when Mark and I were going over a possible itinerary about coming here, we had seen maps that look exactly like this. And we have always believed that New Delhi was Southern India.

Our maps have all changed, even Bombay was changed to Mumbai.”

“Yes, Mumbai is an India name for Bombay. Bombay was the name we got from the English and it has never really been accepted by our culture.”

“I know, I saw that, but, on all of our maps it has always remained Bombay; until over the last few months it all changed.”

“Are you trying to tell me that I am not Sunilo, I am someone else?”

“No, of course not, you are still Sunilo, but you may be from a different dimension.”

“What does that mean? Who am I?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"Sunilo, we are souls, but evidently our souls go through different experiences. We used to also talk about a lot of spiritual things, remember, how you told me that your family always looked to the Father. Now you never mention the Father, you say God all the time."

"I do not remember saying a lot of these things, but in the Hindu religion, Father is acceptable also."

"Yes, but it is more than that, you always seemed to have a greater understanding of all things spiritually, and now you seem as though you are limited. I do not mean you are not spiritual, I mean you do not seem to know the things you did when you were the other Sunilo."

"Could this be because of the change that happened?"

"It has to be, you are at a different level than the other Sunilo, but I could give you a regression to discover why this may be. If you allow I could regress you into the other dimension. Maybe we can find out some answers that way."

"Yes, I would like that, I would like to see what it is that I have been missing."

"Well, why don't we go up to the room, and I will regress you, and see what we can learn. I brought a tape recorder with me, so we can record it. However, lately that hasn't helped since the regressions have been so deep, I have failed to record the information. So, this time it will be more at the surface and you will remember everything."

"That sounds great, let's get started."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

The two of them finished their meals and Beth treated Sunilo for lunch since he bought her tickets, and they both headed up to the room.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(27) Matthias is introduced

One autumn day Mark was doing research dealing with Genealogical lineages, when he met this guy who had been volunteering at the local library. His name was Matthias. He was a friendly sort, one of those people who were able to make friends with almost anyone.

After a few times conversing at the Library, Matthias learned that Mark loved the esoteric and the two of them spoke often about things likes Aliens, UFO's and time travel.

One-night the two of them met in a bar over a couple of brewskies, when Mark was trying to put a story together about time-travelers from the future. This interested Matthias greatly, and the two of them became good friends.

They each spent a lot of time speaking of strange phenomenon that occurs in the world that few ever recognize. Stories about people who are driving and then in the next second appear to be in a foreign place. Or like people who enter places in time, discovering that somehow, they went back in time or forward in time.

There was one story back in the 80's where two couples were coming home from a birthday party, they were driving on a back highway that they had driven dozens of times. On their way home, they came across a restaurant that none of them had ever recalled seeing before.

They decided to stop and get something to eat as it was getting late and they didn't want to wait until they got back home. They ended up pulling in at this restaurant and ordered steaks. Each of them had a good size steak along with a potato, veggies and a salad.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

It was quite a bit of food, and then when they were ready to get their check, they were dumbfounded how cheap it was. Four steaks with all the trimmings and the entire bill was like, \$5.95+tax. They asked the waiter if this was a mistake and the waiter assured them it was valid.

They then called for the owner to speak with him and they queried him, "How do you stay in business selling food this cheap?" He seemed somewhat startled by their question, yet he replied as such, "We have been fortunate I guess?"

Obviously, the answer was not what they were expecting, but they didn't proceed any further down that line of questioning. They simply said, "Thank-you, it was a great meal and we will come back often."

They had noticed the clothing everyone was wearing seemed dated, like being decades earlier, but they thought it was part of the ambiance and style of the Restaurant. It was obvious when they saw this odd out of place setting, which no one had remembered prior, there was this large neon light with a Cowboy on a bucking horse, which lighted the entrance in front of the restaurant.

The setting of the restaurant was smack dab in the desert about 40-miles southeast of Vegas, with very little to anything surrounding it. It was most definitely out of context to the area, as if appearing from nowhere.

Finally, the four of them left and drove back home. Months later one of the couples decided to return to the restaurant. Shockingly, it was no longer there. It was simply desert terrain and no restaurant in sight.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

They were both startled, to say the least. They kept wondering if they were on the correct road, but they knew they were and the restaurant was simply not there, in fact there was nothing to show it had ever been there.

It wasn't until they parked the car and walked over to the area where it had been, and they both stepped on what appeared to be broken glass. Their feeling was, it must have been part of the neon sign, proving something was there, but it has not existed for a very long time.

These were the types of stories that the two of them spent a lot of time speaking about. And it intrigued them greatly. They could spend all evening at bars or even at home discussing these things and never seemed to get tired of it.

Matthias longtime girlfriend, Melanie, also became good friends with Beth, they spent quite a bit of time together when the boys were doing their thing, like shopping or talking about past lives, which often did not seem to interest Melanie, but she went along with it anyway since that was what Beth was into.

Over the years this relationship continued, however one-night when Mark and Matthias were talking about the Matrix, Matthew had run across something interesting. It was called a Crypto-currency named Bitcoin. He had said that he read the white papers on this strange peer to peer transaction and he felt it was very esoteric, almost like it was part of the mathematical equation of the Matrix itself.

Mark was not interested, and never took the time to research it until later. He felt it was just some fly by night thing that would never amount to anything. However, Matthias was becoming a believer after

Time-loop Chronicles 3

days of searching. He then invested \$1000 dollars, and within a few years his economic status changed greatly.

He never let it go to his head though. He decided to sell all his digital currency back into fiat money, which created a very large bank account, but he remained the same type of person, which is very rare.

Often Mark would kid him about him selling the crypto because it kept going higher and higher, eventually it was staggering in value, until it hit a ceiling and then began to bounce back and forth for a few years.

It became way to slow, and transactions were costing through the roof. However, other crypto currencies were coming out and creating a whole new playing field. It seemed that a new technology was taking over the planet, and of course it was.

Soon, newer crypto's were coming on the scene, in fact hundreds of them, they were faster, cheaper and a much better peer to peer technology allowing for safer and faster transactions, and most of them were backed by product solutions. More and more companies were turning to these digital currencies, which saved tons of money not having to pay credit card fees.

As big as Bitcoin was, no one would have been able to realize how fast this new digital currency would begin to saturate the planet. Nations like Russia and China were all getting in the digital currency of cryptos. They even created their own cryptos. As well as the States created their own Federal digital coin.

As this amazing technology was swooping across the planet, it was still a relatively unknown thing. While the few were becoming millionaires, the majority barely ever heard of this technology until the largest social media in the world known as Facebook, decided to

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

interact with one of the Cryptos as a payment for buying and selling option to its 1.5 billion members. And then it took off. It was then Mark began to test the waters and he also did very well.

Matthias was never about Money, he even told Mark that money didn't mean that much to him, he felt he was blessed for one reason only, and that was to help others.

Finally, Matthias and Melanie got married, and that is when their life completely changed. Matthias had a dream one-evening about some mystical event dealing with doors opening and closing. This dream became very important to him. These doors seemed otherworldly. He never was able to explain it, he always said, I am being pulled somewhere. It was then they both decided to move to Southern France.

They moved near Marseilles and bought some land, about 9-acres, that had a beautiful 6-bedroom cottage sitting there on a raised hill, where they could behold the Mediterranean Sea in the South. They often invited Mark and Beth to visit this amazingly beautiful landscape and area. He always said, Mi Casa Su Casa, all expenses paid.

In truth, Matthias was getting lonely and him and Melanie were not spending that much time together anymore. She would spend her time touring the region with her girlfriends and yes even some male friends, but mostly it was about shopping.

Sadly, after about two-years of living in France, Melanie left Matthias. He was quite saddened, but she could no longer deal with his ideas of the world. He became too esoteric for her, where he thought everything was a mystery inside a riddle. He kept saying we don't belong here, this is not our true world.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

At first Melanie went along with it all thinking that it was sort of fun, but after a while it was beginning to wear on her nerves and her new friends thought he was crazy as a loon. She was more grounded into the accepted scientific philosophies of the world and its mainstream science, and didn't want to stray that far away from the norm.

Matthias would telephone Mark continuously now that he was alone and quite bored, and often they would spend hours on the phone talking about their favorite subjects.

Matthias never missed a beat about asking him and Beth to come to France where Mark could spend private time working on his writing. Mark was assured that he could have all the space and quiet he needed. Nothing would disturb him. And at the same time Matthias would have a friend to talk to especially about things they both enjoyed.

Mark decided he wanted to go to a place that afforded him privacy and a place to think about the job he was handed about completing his Father's journal as well as now the other gnosis he became aware of.

Matthias Village overlooked a large acreage of land with a wide swath of green grass to the north, a vineyard to the east, which was owned by nearby neighbor, and a wooded area to the west. It was pleasant, and very quiet. Also in view were the Etoile mountain ranges in the North

Mark finally decided to travel to Southern France, and along with Marie they had flown to Paris and then got on a train to Marseille St-Charles.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Beth would also join them a little later from her trip to India. It would become a great reunion because, so much was about to be discussed and learned in a very short time, especially what Beth was about to reveal after speaking to Sunilo from an email they she sent Mark from India.

Now that Marie and Mark had come to France, they would often sit around discussing the oddity of everything that had been happening. Matthias felt right at home again. It was then Mark decided to let the cat out of the bag as to what he had learned in William's journal along with the memories that had come back to him from his past life as Giovanni.

As they sat there quietly one evening, he began speaking in this mystical way. He seemed to be in a trance, but he was trying to unleash long lost memories from his soul-mind. One of those memories had to do with the Serpentine's Mirror.

As he began speaking, "It is time now that I tell you all about the infamous mirror I have alluded to. When I was back in Toulouse with my Father William as the Abbot, I had come to learn about an artifact that was truly out of this world that I had actually stole from the Vatican."

Over time I have hinted to all of you what this object was, but never really explained it fully. Mostly because I was still retrieving memories.

As I have been finishing William's Lost Journal, all I can say is nothing in this world is what we have ever believed.

We are truly in a simulate world, and most of it is being controlled by the Matrix."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Matthias interrupted, “Oh yea, now were talkin’”

“Mark and Marie both laughed knowing how-much Matthias loved these conversations, Mark continued. “What I have now come to realize is, the Mirror is the Matrix.”

Marie quipped, “Say what?”

“Okay, it is not exactly the matrix, but it is linked to the functioning of the matrix that controls this Cosmos. And I do mean universe, not just the Earth. The Mirror, which is called the Serpentine’s Mirror, for good cause, is a terminal interface, to the Luciferean technology.”

Marie then spoke up, “Terminal interface? You mean it is connected directly to the Matrix, whereas if you have this mirror you could potentially change the matrix?”

“That is exactly what I am saying, and much more. Not only change it, one may be able use it to remove themselves from the Matrix controls.”

Gasps were heard throughout the room. Marie then offered her opinion, “So if we had this Mirror we could leave the matrix.”

Mark stated, “Well at least that I my best guess in principle.”

“Do you really believe it is possible to ever get access to this mirror?”

“Listen, this may shock you but not only is it possible, but I know exactly where the mirror is secretly hiding right now.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Taunts came from across the room from Marie and Matthias, "Oh come on!" and "Yeah, right!"

Mark requested of everyone to sit back and listen closely, "I hid the mirror with my Father William in a past life, so that one day in the future we could come and retrieve it. The Mirror is in the Abbey of the St. Sernin in Toulouse France."

Marie then spoke, "But, wasn't that centuries ago? Would it even still be there? Is the Abbey even the same?"

Mark replied, "That is the good news, we already knew it would be there, and we also know who would find it."

Marie then said, "It is me, right?"

"Yes, Marie we already knew you would be the one to recover the lost mirror. We just didn't know how or when. Now we know, that is why we are all here. That is why Matthias became our doorway that has given us this opportunity, because we are all part of a soul group. Not only those of us in this room, but others also."

It was then Beth had returned from India and walked in the doors while Mark was speaking his last words.

Beth then chimed in after pausing to say her hello's, "Yes, I learned about this from doing a soul regression for Sunilo. I spoke to two others through this regression that claimed they were also part of our soul group but somehow they are hanging between worlds."

Mark shaking his head to the affirmative continued, "Yes Beth Sunilo is also part of the group, but who are these others you mentioned, did they give you a name?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Yes, they said they were, Professor Laura Thol and some FBI agent named, Maxwell Stram.”

Marie laughed, “Oh yea, I read about them in book one of Walter’s book”

“Beth said, “I am half way through the book I must have not come upon them yet.”

Mark’s eyes doubled in size while he replied, “Oh my god, this is too weird! They must now be where the Chief was while he helped Tim Trol, our uncle, escape this world.

One thing I want you all to do while we are here, is study William’s Lost Journal, it will literally blow your socks off. I know Marie and Beth have already been reading it, but read it again and again.

We are all in it in one form or the other, our entire soul group is in this book from previous time-loops. And we have all been part of a journey in helping one another as well as aiding others, to return back home.”

Marie then interrupted as something was bothering her, she asked Matthias, “Could you please tell me who those two people are that are outside, they make me feel somewhat uncomfortable.”

Mark casually wondering, “Yea I have been wondering the same thing, I have seen them hanging around outside and wondered who they were. They do not ever come inside, they just appear outside daily and then disappear.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Matthias responded, "Oh those two, their story is quite unique. About three months ago they had come and knocked upon my door, and asked, if I had any work for them. They had taken a trip from the states, and they seem down on their luck and the spirit within me felt so sorry for them I just had to help.

Compassion surged within me, so I told them I have a large garden in the back that needs tending. They didn't ask for much, a little work and I also give them room and board, and they quietly stay in a small side building, where the gardener's tools are located, to the north of the Cottage, it is a full room and bath.

They hardly make themselves known, they do the work and keep to themselves. But every so often the man comes in and seems to have the right advice or opinion about everything.

He has a strange name, I never asked him about it, but living where we do in Marseilles, new agers come from everywhere, I just figured they were New Agers."

Marie asked, "What's his name?"

"Agape! Isn't that strange, his wife's name is Aggie, but his name is Agape."

Mark, Marie and Beth all busted out laughing as Mark said, "You have got to be kidding me?"

Matthias had to reply, "What?"

As Mark tried to fathom this new set of circumstances, he quietly interjected his thoughts into the open, "Why are we all being brought together here? What is the larger grand scale, I wonder?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark then said, “Agape and Aggie were a big reason in how William finally got home.”

“Why is that?” Matthias asked.

“Because they are also part of our soul group.”

“Oh, this is getting to be too much.” Matthias replied.

Beth then said, “I want to go meet them.”

As Beth left to visit Agape and Aggie, Mark then shared what Marie and Matthias were about to embark on. He then looked at both and said, “You two are going to go to Toulouse and I will tell you exactly where the Mirror is as well as one more thing.”

Marie excitedly asked, “What’s that?”

“We also left behind an ancient prophecy that had been stored and hidden away from the world.”

“Whose Prophecy?” Matthias asked.

“It was a prophecy from Jesus given to John the Beloved.”

“Wow!” Marie and Matthias timed their response perfectly.

“Both of you are going to the Abbey in Toulouse and there you will locate the items exactly where I tell you. Matthias, you will be the guard for Marie to stand as the protector at the secret door. And Marie you will go down into the lost dungeon and retrieve the artifacts and place them securely into a back-pack and bring them back to us.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

At that point, Mark began drawing a map, and on it, it revealed the secret chamber in the Abbot's office and how to open it. He told Marie you will need a powerful flashlight, because there will be no light down where you are going. And make sure you have on tons of bug repellent, you will need it."

"Yuck, I hate spiders." Marie quipped.

It was then Mark told them, "Get some rest, tomorrow morning early, you will be leaving."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(28) Sunilo had entered another dimension

Beth begins the regression by bringing Sunilo deeper and deeper, guiding him ever so carefully into his parallel dimension. It is then he begins to speak.

Sunilo then begins to talk in a mysterious banter, "This is not fair, I have done nothing wrong, you have no right to do this to me."

Beth was worried that something was wrong, and she slowly encouraged him to realize that he was fine, nothing can harm him, that he was safe.

He continued... "They say I was part of a theft that I stole from the Vatican, but I didn't do anything; I never stole from the Vatican. I am a Monk who was visiting Toulouse. I have done nothing wrong."

"What are they doing to you, and who is doing it?"

"They are Vatican guards who have arrested me along with two others and they appear to be bringing us to our death."

"Oh my!"

Beth responded to herself, 'then this is not a parallel life. It must be a past life!'

Not being happy about the circumstances of this regression, she was hoping that she could regress him into this parallel world that he was dealing with, but obviously someone had other plans.

Suddenly, a new voice, a female voice began to speak through Sunilo, and it interfered in the chaotic thoughts by stating, "The Monk

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

that is speaking is a past life of the one who is with you, but something occurred creating a transition of sorts. And he was split in two."

Beth listening to this responded with confusion. "Split, what does that mean, and who are you that is speaking?"

There was no response, so the next thing Beth did was she sped up the time and told the Monk to witness his death, but from afar, so that he did not feel the torment and pain.

Sunilo began to speak in a calm manner. "This man is being crucified."

"Oh my god, is this Jesus?" Beth laments.

"No, it is me... This man is hanging from a stake nailed to his own cross. He is dying slowly. He keeps screaming that he is innocent. The guards are just laughing as the towns people stood by, some cheering and some jeering. Suddenly, the face of the Monk changed, and calmness took over."

"What happened, did he die?"

"The monk began to speak of living in the future, and he died with that thought in his soul-mind, that he was someone from the future. That someone is now laying on your bed."

"So, it is just revealing that this was Sunilo's past life?"

"Not exactly!"

Right then, a new voice entered, a male voice that was neither like the other nor was it Sunilo's voice.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“When this event ensued, he died at the same time he perceived his future self, and when this occurred, his soul-mind splintered into two. He accidentally created a dual future timeline that would mesh together at the same time, but only one time-line would be dominant.”

“Why did this happen?”

There was silence for a few seconds and then the female voice returned. “It happened to teach you that you must restore the time-line.”

“Who me?”

“Yes, your meeting this ‘one’ was all set up by Mark and William.”

“What does Mark have to do with any of this?”

“The one who was crucified on the right side, was indeed Mark’s past life avatar, known as Friar Giovanni, and the one in the middle was the Abbot of Saint Sernin, which was also William your father.”

“I don’t understand what does this have to do with Sunilo.”

“Sunilo became a bridge between two dimensions that were accidentally created by Giovanni and William, therefore, and unfortunately he was dragged into the same means of death.

When he was the Monk he did the same work for the Vatican that Giovanni did. He left because his soul provided the way for Giovanni to join. The object was to steal the crystal and bring it back to your time.”

“What crystal?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"The Matrix."

"Excuse me?"

"They discovered some sort of computer that operates the entire world, or should I say your cosmos."

The male voice then spoke, "Sunilo sacrificed himself to become the bridge or conduit to allow for the dimensions to come together for Mark, so he could retrieve the crystal that helped create this multiple time-line.

This could only happen if Sunilo became the bridge. So, while he remains in the last time-loop, his bridge connects to the new one where you exist now. If this didn't occur, you would also be lost in the old time-loop, and none of these things would have ever been known."

"What you are telling me is, that the time-loop we are in now we would have never made it, we would still be in the old time-loop. I wonder if that is why my entire family is different in this time-line?"

The Female voice then interrupted, "What we are saying is, if Sunilo didn't do what he did, this time-loop would not have existed. Even though it was created, it would have been changed back to the old one via the mirror. But when Sunilo became the bridge he kept the opening between them both, which allowed for the crystal to be hidden and not fall into the wrong hands, at least not yet.

But this is not all that needed to occur, now that the bridge was opened, a 'door' had to be placed to allow you to return to your true selves, or better stated, remember who you were from past timelines. Sunilo is the bridge, and another among you, is the door."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“I am not sure I totally understand... among us?”

“Yes, your soul-group... Try to imagine that all time is the same time, but the events are changed periodically giving the impression of a new timeline. Now try to imagine that each event past, present and future are all working together in an alignment, but seem to be vastly separated.

What may have happened hundreds of years ago, is connected to all life-times instantly as if they were right next to each other. Often there are what is called synchronistic events that the mind usually never recognizes. An event, or something you do, or something that is done to you, it is all part of a greater plan.

These events are attention grabbers, and even if you do not recognize them now, someday you will see the connection and understand why it happened a certain way.

What this is revealing, is everything that may seem random or even disconnected could very well be alignments coming together for the good of the whole. These events are correlated between soul-groups. And they are connected by the spirit of the Caelestus Pater and the Panem Vitae.

This was our assurance that even though our body is mindwiped that our spirit will always lead us as if one life connects to the other; therefore, nothing is ever lost except memory when it is not needed at certain times.”

Beth in her quandary asked, “Who are you that is speaking through Sunilo?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“We are good friends of your Father William from a different time dimension, the one you were within, but it changed to this new time-line. We were known as Professor Laura Thol, and FBI Agent Maxwell Stram in a parallel time-line.

Now we stand between time, giving our last aid to the soul-group. You have read all about us from the manuscript William left behind and Mark now has in his possession.”

“Oh yes indeed, I know about you.” Beth replied.

At that moment Sunilo awakened, and recalled everything that was said. He was thrilled to understand that a great divine plan had been working on behalf of the soul-group and that he was part of it.

Beth and Sunilo gave each other a bear hug, and they spent the rest of the night talking about pretty much everything that came to their mind, catching up on time lost. Sunilo then went home and returned later.

The next day Sunilo took Beth around the city and gave her a tour of the sites in the town of New Delhi. It was a great learning experience, witnessing the culture, and religious ceremonial sites. Yet sadly, the time had come where Beth had to leave.

She told Sunilo that she would be selling in her return ticket to change it to go to Southern France and meet Mark and Marie and their friend.

She then gave a kiss on Sunilo's cheek and said, I am so happy to meet the man that has become our bridge. Sunilo blushed a little and then said, you have restored my hope in all things. Beth then boarded the plane.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(29) Marie retrieves the Mirror and the Prophecy

Marie leaves Marseilles with Matthias and they both traveled to Toulouse France to the Abbey at Saint Sernin or now what is called the church at the Basilica. They were now on a mission to seek the Serpentine's Mirror and the hidden scrolls.

They were driving in Matthias small golden-brown Peugeot. On the way there Marie commented, "Did you see that?"

Mathias responded, "No, what did you see?"

"Strange a car just like yours passed us, and there were two people that looked like myself and..."

"Like who?"

"One of them looked like me, but the other I couldn't tell for sure. But it was really weird."

By the time they got to Toulouse, they then located the Basilica immediately, as it could not be missed. The exterior is a splendid vision, especially when one moves towards the church from the east, you would notice its Romanesque appearance. Also, there are five chapels which are skirted by two more chapels on each of the transepts, creating an extraordinarily pleasing visual.

The complex is constructed of red brick, with white stone used for ornamental intonations and sculptures. Many of the rooflines of the chapels are covered with corbels carved with both human and animal sculptures.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

In the background there is an eight-sided brick tower 65-meters high, with five tiers including three Romanesque and two Gothic, with white stone colonettes, and a small stone spire.

Obviously, much has changed to the exterior in almost 800-years, as Marie and Matthias were in awe, she said, "Well I hope the inside has not changed that much or we may never find what we are looking for."

They then located a parking spot outside the Basilica, as they were about to turn in when this other driver whipped in front of them and stole their spot, so they had to take the next one a couple spaces away. It was then they made their plans. They discussed how to keep other's occupied while Marie located the secret panel.

They then left the car and slowly meandered their way to the Basilica with Marie toting a back-pack, and Mathias holding papers along with maps creating the appearance of being nothing more than some American tourists.

They noticed that the entire building was made in the form of a crucifix, which really made them wonder. Is this the same building Giovanni had been crucified in front of, as Mark had revealed to them, and they turned it into a gigantic crucifix?

As soon as they made it inside, immediately Marie noticed this picture and inscription hanging off the wall, it spoke of the first Bishop in Toulouse in 250AD, for some reason she had trouble believing that. However, she noticed the name of the Bishop was Saturninus.

She realized that the name of the Abbey was named after this Bishop, which strangely identifies with Saturn. They simply shortened it to Sernin, instead of Saturnin, evidently, they didn't want it to be

Time-loop Chronicles 3

affiliated with Saturn who happens to be a pagan god representing Chronos. The God of Time.

“That’s Ironic,” Matthias contended, “Do you think it has anything to do with the...”

Beth interrupted at that point and said, “Yep, I know where you are going with this, the same thing occurred to me.”

Paradoxically, the first bishop was dragged into the streets and killed, it reminded her of the contrived crucifixion she had learned about through Mark’s past life of, Giovanni, on how they were dragged into the streets and slain, yet strangely that event mysteriously seems hidden and unknown in history.

It makes one wonder if the Bishop was simply a contrived creation of what really happened to Giovanni and his friends, and they removed it from this time and replaced it back to another time.

And the reasoning for this dragging out into the streets and Saturnin’s murder was stated that he refused to worship pagan gods, which again, taking Matthias own words; is sort of ironic, in which the church has been primarily guilty of Pagan beliefs for a very long time.

Sort of an odd end to a man who was termed with a pagan name, that represents ‘time’ who may have been supplanted back in time to cover up the Friars murder.

They both began walking down a hallway trying to figure out where the office of the Abbot may be or may have been. They ran across a couple of individuals that appeared to be part of the Church as their attire testified, so they asked them where the Office of the Abbot may have been located.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Marie then inquired, "Could you tell me where the office of the Abbot may have been possibly close to 800-years ago?"

The first man answered, "No my dear I would have no idea where that might have been located, but we know it was not in this main building."

This was not good news, this may end their plans of finding the mirror. But then Matthias whispered into Marie's ear saying, "But Mark said, the mirror revealed a Mary would discover it, someone is going to discover it."

As they walked a little further down the hallway of this majestic church, which may be the largest in the world. They ran into another man that appeared quite elderly and had an air about him as if he might know the history of this amazing Basilica.

Matthias then called over to the elderly man and asked, "Would you have any idea where the office of the Abbot may have been in 1273 AD."

Marie sort of nudged him thinking he was giving too many precise details. And Matthias shrugged it off.

The elderly man answered, "That is good a question my son, I have studied into the history of our church, and have gained insight on many things. However, wherever the office may have been it is no longer there. The building was transformed long ago."

Both Marie and Matthias dropped their heads in disappointment. This is not the news they wanted to hear. Marie then walked away a few steps as Matthias continued to discuss the history of the church.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

And Marie called Mark on her cell phone to verify the horrible news that the mirror may never be found.

After a couple of rings, the Machine answered with Matthias voice, “Yo, it’s me, leave a message after the beep.”

Marie then spoke, “Mark, I know you’re listening, pick up!”

Quickly Mark picked up the phone in the Cottage and replied, “Hey Marie what’s happening? “

“Mark! We got bad news, the office of the Abbey doesn’t exist anymore, it is a now a gigantic church setting on this spot.”

“I don’t understand the mirror said...”

Marie interrupted, “Yea, I know what the mirror said, but I think we got played.”

“Oh man that is not good news, I did not expect that, but then again it has been nearly 800-years, only an idiot would think it would still be the same building after all this time.”

As Mark completed his sentence, Marie then said, “Wait a second.”

Matthias had come back over and began saying something to Marie about what the old man had just told him.

Marie spoke again to Mark and said, “We may have discovered something interesting, I will call you back.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Matthias then explained to Marie, that the old man had told him that the office may have been under the apse where a doorway could be located within the chevet. It just happens to be the oldest part of the building, constructed in the 11th century, and consists of nine chapels, five opening from the apse and four in the transepts, whatever that means.

He said in the back there are old relics that have grown dusty and there is a room back there. It might have been where the original offices had been, but they are now cordoned off.

The original construction was sometime between the 10th and 11th century. Well to say the least, that was obvious welcomed news for Marie and Matthias as it fits perfectly with the time-frame when the disciple John may have walk the grounds of this ancient area and where the office of the Abbot may be located.

They then offered there thanks to the old man and began to do a little spying in the back of the Chevet.

When they got back there they noticed something odd, it appeared to be an old building that had been built upon over time. They never removed it, they simply built around it. And now it stands as an old relic in the very back.

As they scoured around through the area, which appeared to be off limits, Mathias would stand watch while Marie would scan the ancient building, and there is where she discovered a possible door. A very old door.

However, this door was not going to come open that easily as it appeared to have been 'plaster of paris' upon it. As she was looking for a way to open the door, Matthias came back and said, listen there are a

Time-loop Chronicles 3

few people heading our way, we need to either hide or find an opening, but we can't stay here.

Marie then took out of her back-pack a small crow bar, and she commented, "You never know what you will need."

Now Marie is no longer a young whippersnapper, but you would never think that to look at her, She, is wily and very persistent, when she wants something done she doesn't back off.

She then whipped out this crow bar and started prying the door open. Matthias was attempting to rush her before the jig would be up where they would be busted.

Finally, Marie nudged part of this ancient wall open enough to have both of them pull it open fully, which revealed an old door way entrance, and then they walked in and shut the portal behind them.

She then took out her flash light and handed Matthias a second flash light, and they began to investigate the room. It was indeed old, very old and falling apart. Even the furniture in there had basically come to nothing. The floors had become dirt. She wondered how would they ever discover the lost dungeon from this place.

They went to the back of the room and there they discovered the walls still standing after all this time, but very dilapidated clay brick mixed with a form of wood partitions.

Marie reminded Mathias that they needed to knock on the walls to find a hollow sound. As they both started rapping on the old interior walls, the stuff coming off them was turning into a dust that was creating a breathing issue. Who knows what that stuff is or what diseases it may carry.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

It was then Matthias hit a wall and it was most definitely hollow, and that part happened to be a wooden frame. He started feeling to the left side for the notch to open the secret panel as Mark had instructed.

Eventually, Marie took her crow bar and started banging against the wall and it crumbled right before their eyes. She said, "I truly doubt that mechanism still works after all of this time, and since we don't have a lot of time to spare, I thought this would be best," as she continued to beat the wall apart until the entire façade crumbled and they both saw the steps.

"Oh my god, Marie, there they are." Cried Matthias.

A feeling surged through them both, they knew they were standing on the precipice of both the future and the past. They then slowly walked down the old steps, which was nothing more than levels of hard dirt, into this foreboding room, into a world of cobwebs and rats and who knows what else. As they stepped off the final dirt layer, Marie nearly passed out, fortunately Matthias was there to catch her.

"Are you okay?" He asked.

"I don't know what happened, I just blacked out."

He then motioned to her to sit down on the last step. He attempted to clear away any foreign debris but that was like wiping off dirt upon dirt. As she sat there recovering, she shined her light around the room. And then she said,

"Matthias?"

"Yea!"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

"I have been here before, I was down here."

"How do you know?"

"I just know, when I blacked out, a memory came to me a very old memory, that I was down here, I helped John plant the messages..."

There was silence, then Matthias asked, "Are you sure, is it even possible?"

"Matthias, I was here, I know it."

As they both somberly browsed the room, it was obvious nothing was left. There were no shelves, nothing. There had been some wood that appeared to be rickety that had obviously dissolved over time, and that may have been the shelves, but nothing was left. No clay jars, nothing, except...

Marie was shining her light towards the ground and for some odd reason the light was being reflected back at her from this one spot. She said, "Look at that..."

Matthias asked, "What is that thing? Something is there."

He then walked over and bent down, with his flash light, and beyond all miracles, there it was. The infamous Serpentine's mirror. "Oh wow," they were both in a state of shock. The mirror was inundated with years of dust and dirt and what appeared to be sand, but enough was uncovered for the light to reflect from.

Nether one could speak, Marie got up and staggered a little walking toward where Matthias was, and as she bent down, she said, "There it is, after 800-years, my god, there it is."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Both Matthias and Marie looked at each other with amazement and then back down to stare at this long-lost relic.

Initially, they were beside themselves with uncertainty, which leaped frogged over to happiness, and then fear set in when they realized what this thing really was.

Marie then grabbing a couple of gloves out of the back-pack as she vigorously placed them over her shaking hands, she then reached down to pick up the mirror. As the dirt fell off, she took her other gloved hand to remove the remnant of the dust, and there it was, they were staring at the magical looking glass, the interface to the entire matrix programming of the universe.

Matthias then remarked, "How can we turn it on."

"I am not sure we can." Marie stated, "I think we should wait until we return to the others, when we are all together to discover the magic of this glass, we do not want to make any unnecessary moves, we know how powerful this thing is."

Matthias agreed, "Yep, sounds good to me."

Marie then placed the mirror into her back-pack while saying, "Wow this thing is light, I mean it barely ways a few ounces." Mathias then led the way back up the steps, but Marie didn't follow. She told Matthias to continue and she would be up momentarily.

Matthias replied, "Excuse me? You want to stay down here?"

"Listen, amuse an old lady, I need to figure something out about my being in here so very long ago."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“Okay suit yourself, but don’t be long or I will return quickly.”

“Don’t fret, I will be up shortly.”

Marie was not being forthright, there was something else going on after her blackout that she did not divulge to Matthias. When Marie remembered her being in this antiquated dungeon, she also regained another memory. And that reminiscence was that she left something behind a very long time ago. And she knew exactly where it would be.

As Matthias made his way up the steps, she then walked over to the wall to the left of where they had been standing. There was a loose chunk of wall inside the main wall, as if it was cut out and replaced.

Marie grabbed her crowbar again and whispering to herself saying, “And people wonder why I keep so much junk in my pack. They aint going to wonder no more.”

She then pried the internal chunk of wall away and it dropped to the ground, and she reach in with her gloved hands and voila, she almost let out a scream, but she contained herself enough to reveal the magical treasure she had remembered that she left behind so many centuries ago.

It was none other than the infamous Holy Grail. And with it was a scroll, a scroll that should have been dust after all this time, yet it appeared to be as new as anything contemporary, because the scroll was placed within the goblet, and whatever magical properties were in that goblet gave life-energy to the scroll.

And you know what is strange, Marie knew this, she knew it because she remembered it all.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Finally, Marie placed the treasure in her back-pack with the Mirror, and she made her trek back up the steps, greeting Matthias in the ancient room, yet she never told him about the Holy Grail, she just said, "Well, this was more than a success."

Matthias agreed and they both reopened the door to leave, and at that very moment, Marie's cell phone started playing her ringtone, 'The Impossible dream.'

She grabbed it quickly as to not notify others of their whereabouts who were by this time extremely close by, she said, "Oh my, not a good time for this thing to ring."

She grabbed her cell phone out of her pocket as if she was in a dual with a gunman in the old west, she ripped it out and flipped it with one hand like she was a professional gunslinger and answered the phone quickly with a whisper, "Hello, what is it."

It was Mark returning her call from earlier, the sound was a little too high, so Mark's voice radiated quite a bit as he replied, "Hey what's happening, did you have any luck finding where the room may have been."

Marie cautiously responded in a low tone, "Mark, I can't talk now, but we got the mirror."

Mark didn't hear her and responded with a shout, "WHAT?"

"Shhh, Mark we found the mirror, we got it, we are coming home."

Mark then yelled out, "Halleluiah!" Marie quickly hung up on him and Matthias and Marie left the premises.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

As they walked outside with high ecstasy and Marie holding a clandestine relic beyond all secrets, they began to head to their car. It was then Marie stopped suddenly and tugged on Matthias to do the same, while she blurted out, "What the hell?"

Marie pulled Matthias back behind a wall, and then said, "Look around the wall, who is it that is walking towards the church. Who are those two over there?"

As Matthias slowly peeks around the wall, his demeanor exposed something very shocking. "My god how is that possible?"

Marie and Matthias saw themselves walking into the church as they had come out of the same vehicle Matthias owns. Matthias then continued, "Maria that is you and me? How is this possible."

Marie then said, "I told you I saw someone driving in similar vehicle when we were heading here. Time-lines merging is my best guess, it has to be time-lines merging together, but why?"

They then began walking over to the mysterious duplicate vehicle after their counterparts entered the church, and strangely enough it had been parked only two spaces away from their car.

It was then Matthias said, "If we had taken the first spot before that idiot stole it, we would have been in the same parking space as our doppelgangers. Now that is bizarre. Did the guy who ramrodded our spot, was he somehow the universes way from stopping a paradox from occurring."

"Yea, curious no doubt." Marie chimed.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

It was then as they were walking towards the other vehicle, and were now about 25-feet away, the duplicate vehicle vanished, it just disappeared.

“Holy Grail, did you just see that!” Marie uttered.

“I am not sure what I just saw, but why did you say Holy Grail?”

“Oh, I did? I meant to say, Holy Cow...”

Marie’s excitement along with this weird experience of déjà vu almost let loose the secret, but then she asked, “Did we witness a time-loop event of another period? Did we cause something to occur when we took the mirror?”

“You got me!”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(30) The Mandela Effect Quandary

Mark along with the others all got into a discussion of how many things were changing in their world. People who had been once reported to have died, are now very much alive.

Even scenes in movies had changed, and millions were positive they witnessed these events morph into something else. Yet, there were also millions that never saw anything change, that everything seemed normal to them.

Mark then added something very important to the discussion, "One thing I have realized that is really telling, is that the people who are freaked out about the apparent changes, they are truly disturbed and disoriented, something that is doubtful to occur when it is just a memory flaw, especially when it involves millions of people all diagnosing the same variations.

Those that recognize the change are having difficulty dealing with the deviations, like being spooked deeply into their very soul. There is another-worldly attribute about this. Now maybe I am not being fair, because I am one of those who have seen the many inconsistencies, so maybe I am biased.

However, this is what I have noticed when trying to develop a conclusion. The people that witness the changes, they come from all walks of life, there are no ties, or connections to one another. And they are deeply affected by these odd events.

Now in contrast, those who do not see the changes do not recognize anything altering. They claim that is it all memory failure. Yet for some strange reason, none of them seem to have the quote end quote 'normal memory failure' problem.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Under scientific scrutiny this makes no sense. If it is a flaw in memory, then everyone would agree on some things. But those who do not see the changes not only disagree, but they get angry and critical to those who have believed they have witnessed such changes. The unbelievers act like they are special among the masses for not falling for this ploy.

It appears to me that vanity and ego really rise during events that reveal things out of the 3rd dimensional consensus reality. Therefore, my feeling is, I must call fallacy on those who do not see anything, and place more of my belief on those that do recognize the changes.

However, this may also not be totally fair because what we are beginning to learn is that not everyone is from the same dimension, somehow there is some sort of frequency bleed-over.

Therefore, we must agree to disagree, that some people see the change because in their timeline, something did change. Nevertheless, those who do not agree, either are being stubborn, or they never had anything change, and everything is normal to them.

I could see why they would be angry, because in a sense they are being left out of some of the most amazing events ever realized, yet no matter how hard they try, they don't recognize they peculiarities.

To them the time, places and events haven't modified, so their only reaction is to point fingers and blame those who do witness these obscure variations as simply being out of touch with reality.

How would you feel if many were saying that they recognize something, and no matter how hard you look you cannot see it? Your only recourse is to accuse, blame and judge others for somehow being mentally askew. You certainly would not want to take the blame."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark was watching videos of many people claiming changes have occurred, in every-day products, movie scenes, logos, even places on earth as we witnessed from India, which revealed that things have morphed.

As he watched these videos, he realized that he didn't agree with all the supposed changes others were speaking of, and he admitted that memory could be faulty in many cases.

Marie then offered an opinion, "I saw a video not that long ago proving our brain is not as brilliant as we would like to believe. We fool our brains all the time by the way light hits, or shadows, and our brain believes it sees something or even hears something that is not valid.

This evidence really gave me the creeps because it proved how easy it was to be fooled. Therefore, there is all possibility people are just fooling themselves.

However, I have heard some of these stories when people saw the change, the problem was I could identify with what they were saying, exactly, point by point as they describe the changes they witnessed. And then many others also verified it to the same nth-degree.

I could see one person getting it wrong, maybe even two or at most three, but dozens, hundreds, thousands, or even millions? No way, when we see that, it should be proof something happened, because no two people ever see things alike.

Nevertheless, when we are talking about things we see daily, like commercials, books, products, it is hard not to see the same thing.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

I fall into the category that things do change and have changed and after listening to Beth's story about India I am blown away, even though I cannot be sure where New Delhi was located, but I do believe it was southern India."

Mark continued to watch some videos as everyone else was chatting among one another talking about their own strange events, everyone except for Matthias, he was strangely quiet.

Mark then alerted everyone to something he saw online, and it caught his attention as another change that took place.

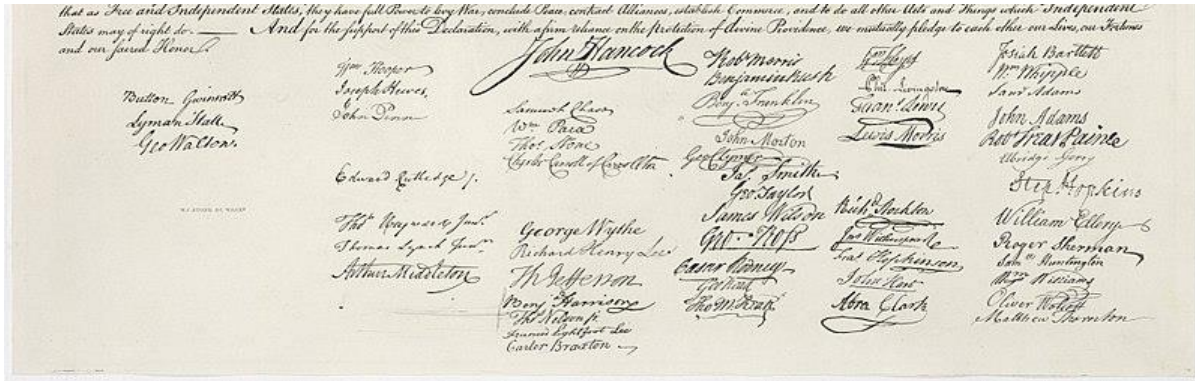
"Hey guys listen to this; John Hancock signed the Declaration of Independence as we all well know. His signature was the first to be added to the list since at that time he was President prior to the United States of America coming into fruition. It wasn't until 1789 when George Washington became the first official President of the United States of America.

Therefore, for 13-years after the signing of the Declaration, America did not have its first President under the new terms. Therefore, Hancock was one of the originals and he was President of the new colonies. However, something very strange occurred in this changing or morphing effect.

When Hancock signed his name, it was the largest and most bold, he signed it in the middle of the area where all the signatures of the others were to be added afterwards.

Look at this, you guys!

Time-loop Chronicles 3



Marie spoke, "Mark, that is not where I remember seeing his signature when I went to school."

Mark Continued, "I agree, but notice now that Hancock's signature is right under the bottom of the words of the Declaration, almost as if it was forced there and even bleeding into some of the letters of the document which would have been perilous to do so."

In fact, I remember where his signature was, and you can plainly see an opening or space where I recall his name had been entered, but now it appears that his name was removed from the middle of the signatures and replaced directly under the article.

It is just another strange oddity that people are calling the Mandela effect. But the question is why is there all these strange quirks in our reality, yet not everyone sees it?

Did someone back in time edit this document. Had it been part of two different timelines, where Hancock signed it in two different places?

Whatever happened or may have occurred, how many of you remember that Hancock's signature had been the boldest and in the center of the other signatures?"

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Marie immediately responded again, "Like I said, I remember it being bolder and even larger, and yes I do recall from school that I always wondered why his signature was the largest and in the middle of the others. No one ever told us who Hancock really was back in those days. But yea, his signature was in the middle of the others, I have no doubt about it."

Beth then interjected a thought, "Yea, this is really strange, I also remember that Hancock's signature was the boldest, and in the center, his name was never forced directly under the document. Where did you get this?"

"Beth, this is supposedly the original copy of the Declaration of Independence. But this is not the way we remembered it being, even within our lifetime."

Mark then turned back around and went to his computer and then remarked. "Yea, it is also funny that the Berenstein Bears, changed to Berenstain bear.

Millions have reported that this was simply not how it was. Of course, I never knew about them in the first place, so I cannot verify one way or the other. But when millions see the same thing, yea, something has happened.

Oh, and here is another one, I remember like it was yesterday the first time I went to the theatre to watch Star Wars. The scene that showed,

Beth interrupted, "Oh the, 'Luke, you are my Son' part, right?" Now it says, 'NO, you are my son,' with the name Luke no longer being there."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark continued, “What I love about this scene, is James Earl Jones the very actor who played Darth Vader, revealed in the script that it was ‘Luke, you are my son.’

Even he commented how shocked he was to find out that he was Luke’s Father while being interviewed after the movie. Now come on, you mean to say the actor himself didn’t even know his own lines?

There are many odd changes. And they don’t end there, many witnessed changes from all over where even people have disappeared. One story that I read is where this guy is saying he had neighbors, and they had twin daughters.

One day, one of the daughters disappeared, they were of the age where they could have gone to college, so he always assumed one of them just left home. He never bothered to speak to the sister or mother, as to where she had gone.

Finally, he decided to ask the twin sister where her sister had gone? The girl looked at him like he was insane. She said, ‘What twin sister, I don’t have a twin sister.’

The guy even told her the other girl’s name and she said, nope, never had a sister. He then went to her mother and asked her, once again he received the same reply, the woman said, ‘I never had a twin daughter.’ I mean talk about freaky...”

Finally, Matthias spoke, “Yeah that would have caused me to come unglued, if that happened to me.”

Marie then asked, “Mark, what is causing all of this? You are the alien master, (Laughter) why is this occurring?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Not exactly sure Marie, but I do believe there are those who have access to government technology and have used it to travel back in time. It is possible they are actively making changes.

Yet, that doesn't answer all things, because too many changes are so slight they would often be overlooked, why use this technology to change a period to a comma or an exclamation point to a question mark? You see what I am saying, some of the changes look more like quirks.

Now it is possible when you do make a change they create a domino effect that somehow interferes in other minor events. However, when people disappear and there is no memory of them by the first party, then that is something to really begin to alert one that something is very wrong.”

Beth began wondering, “What about CERN, I have heard people say that they might be interfering with time and space. Could CERN have something to do with this?”

Mark replied, “Beth, good question, remember, William spoke of CERN a little in his journal. He spoke of CERN's logo representing 666. He also stated, that Shiva was known as the ‘Destroyer of Worlds’ and it is the main centerpiece leading into the CERN complex.

There is no doubt CERN is involved somehow. But to what extent as to what they have done or are going to do, it is a mystery right now. It is feasible to even believe CERN may bring the destruction of earth in what we call the Time-Loop. It is anyone's guess right now. But 666, and Shiva, are pretty good clues.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

It is also interesting that the Jewish lamentation period, known as the week-long period of mourning, where they bring in the dead, is also called, Shiva, coincidence? Well that is up to discerning minds.

We do know one thing, that the Serpentine's Mirror had some effect on changing the future, so we know that events of the past could change and create a new timeline for both past and future.

I believe it behooves all of us to recognize how illusory our world really is. And that nothing is set in stone when it comes to the illusion of time."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(31) The Lost Medieval Prophecy

It had come to the time where Mark, Beth, Marie and Matthias, were now ready to read the lost prophecy. They all gathered around in the living room of the Cottage, all having their tea, coffee or whatever drink of choice, sitting before the stoked fire.

As they sat shoulder to shoulder they placed the mirror in front of them, so they could all read the document together. They had waited for this precise moment, and they had mixed emotions about it all, wondering what John the Beloved was sharing with the future, but they were now ready.

As it turned out the mirror contained the lost prophecy because Friar Giovanni and William placed it into the mirror to conceal it and even though the actual document was removed from the Bible, it remained in the mirror. All they had to do was call it up.

It became apparent that only William could activate the mirror among the group, however, when sitting together if they all placed their hands upon the crystal glass, it then activated. And that is what they did.

As the crystal genie turned on, they simply requested the Lost Prophecy of John the Beloved. And voila...

**This chapter has been damned by Order of King
James VI**

**It has been removed from all copies past and
present, those who read it shall suffer greatly, and
those who destroy it shall be greatly rewarded in the
Kingdom on Earth.**

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Mark 17/1-20

The Prophecy of John the Beloved, the chapter was added within the last book of Mark.

1. When lost in the dark; one chooses to find light.
2. Thus, the parable reveals, darkness leads to hell, light leads to paradise.
3. Find the true path, and walk ye in it.
4. Lusts and faulty desires of the flesh dim your light, yet seeking for the highest energy of the Father, gives great brightness unto your glory.
5. The lighter you become, the more invisible you are.
6. Your light will so shine in another dimension, whereas the darkness goes dimmer and dimmer, yet it begins to solidify even more.
7. In the latter days both seeds will walk amongst each other until the great damnation, called the Apostacy.
8. In those days, some of the children of the Father will not be seen or heard yet they will remain until the Harvest.
9. The dark ones, those who succumb to the perilous lies and find comfort in evil and wickedness shall remain visible and suffer horribly.
10. Both shall dwell together, but no harm will come against the light, only the darkness.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

11. As it was written, evil shall be called good, and the good shall be called evil.

12. A hundred shall fall on your right, and a thousand shall fall on your left, but you yourself shall not be harmed.

13. You shall walk amongst the error as the chosen children, but you shall not be partakers of their plagues.

14. As you lift your spirit and seek the highest, you shall be rewarded greatly, and the Harvest will come to bring you to Paradise.

15. But those who continue to walk in the ways of Baal, shall continue to roam this forbidden world forever and ever.

16. Our Lord revealed he shall truly return and gather the elect from the four corners of the Earth.

17. Yet only those who are invisible shall be gathered, and those who are visible shall be forsaken.

18. The Earth will turn over, and its garden will be replanted. But those of the Lord shall reap eternal life in all its glory, leaving behind the desolation and abomination, to relive its torment.

19. The Mystery of our Lord was revealed in his life and afterwards. That the body is only the vessel of death, and it is seen, but that which is within is from the Father, and it is our vessel unto Eternal life, and it is unseen.

20. Let this Prophecy be known for generations from heretofore and beyond, and unto those who have eyes to see,

Time-loop Chronicles 3

let them awaken, and ears to hear, let them sing, but unto those who are dead, let them remain...And so shall this mystery be established forever and ever, AMEN.

Footnote: Mark 17 was removed from all original copies of all bibles in the early 17th century, never to be seen again. But alas, it has been recovered for those who await the Harvest.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(32) The Story of Mary Magdalena from the mind of Marie

After Matthias and Marie returned to Marseilles after they had retrieved the Mirror and the scroll along with one other mysterious item. It was then they learned that Marie discovered the famed Chalice, the goblet that Jesus drank from, at the last supper, the famed holy grail.

Marie revealed that a Mary was with John when they hid these items in the Saint Sernin Abbey. However, that was nothing compared to the story she was about to reveal.

A story that has long been tossed about with very little proof, yet now from the mind of Marie she paints an entirely different picture than anyone has ever heard before. How could she know? Where would she get this knowledge? Did it come directly from the Holy Grail that she discovered and brought back with her.

When asked by Mark, how she knew where the famed Holy Grail was located, without hesitation she said, "Mary put it there when you were not looking."

Mark with complete shock upon his face responded, "Excuse me, when I was not looking? I had been in that secret chamber with William as Giovanni of old, but no one by the name of Mary was there, how can you say Mary put it there when I was not looking?"

Marie laughed and said, "Buckle up everyone, I am getting too ahead of myself, because I am about to unleash a story that will leave you all speechless.

Marie began, "You have all heard of Mary Magdalena, right?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Everyone began shaking their heads in the affirmative.

“Well it is time you know the real story. There was never any Mary Magdalena, her name was Mary the youngest child of Simon Zebedee. The names back in those days were unlike today, where we have a first and last name, yet in stark contrast, we do have first and last names that came from this same period. Ironical, right?”

The first name is your given name at birth, and the last name was the name of your Father or your house of importance, as employment. In this case her name was Mary of Zebedee, today she would be called Mary Zebedee.

She also had a sister named Martha, along with two brothers named James and John. Both James and John had been called out by the great teacher, our Brother, which many today now call, Jesus. Both James and John were fishermen by trade and they also worked with Peter and Andrew.

The name Magdalena, which had been attributed to Mary was more of a sign ritual, not a person's name. The Magdal is actually, Migdal, it is a step pyramid tower where sacrifices of young virgins occurred.

When Mary was young, her Father, to appease the gods had chosen her to be sacrificed upon one of the Migdals. This granted the family great prestige and honor and as well as economic prosperity.”

“Wait a minute, sacrifices? They had sacrifices in those days among those people?” Shouted Beth...

“Yes indeed, in fact the Bible speaks of it in the Old Testament as one of the reasons the Israelites were punished as they were

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

worshiping before BAAL the pagan god. Baal was a Semitic name for demon Lord.

These demons and their human followers get their power from the sacrifices of virgins and young children, the more blood they spill the more power they get, until they have the appearance of being untouchable. And it is still occurring even until the end of days.

Therefore, she became known as Mary of the Migdal, which transformed over the years to Mary Migdala, and now today it has become Mary Magdalena.

Martha the oldest sister had already passed the age, she was homelier and not as attractive as Mary. And this often angered her that Mary got so much attention. Whereas Martha spent most of her time working, Mary spent more time learning.

This often-offended Martha because she believed this was not the place for a woman, that she should be working and taking care of the family at home.

These ritual sacrifices could only be done upon young virgins that were specially chosen. At the time, the entire family of Zebedee was close to Jesus, and he often come to their house and ate and slept over. When he had learned that Mary had been chosen for a sacrifice, he felt great compassion for her.

He spoke to James and John asking why they would allow this. They replied that it was a custom their father followed and that he had been following for a very long time. And that trying to interfere could bring great curses upon the household.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Once you were chosen you were then named Migda'lana or the Virgin girl of the Migdal."

Beth then interrupted Marie again and asked, "Wasn't Lazarus a brother to Mary also?"

"Lazarus was the name of John-Mark, it was his ritual name."

Mark then also interrupted, "Wasn't he the one who died that Jesus brought back to life."

"Yes and no, Lazarus was never dead, he was part of a ritual where he could leave his body and go different places, somewhat akin to regression. In this instance he traveled beyond his body for so long, his body began to deteriorate and stink. Those among them thought he had died."

Mark responded, "Wow, sort of what happened to me when Beth was regressing me, you thought I had died, and I nearly did."

Marie laughed a little and said, "Ironic isn't it?"

Beth replied, "How is what happened to Mark, Ironic?"

"I will get to that, just keep listening..." Marie continued, "When Jesus was called to the family, they asked him if he could heal Lazarus because he had died, Jesus said he did not die. He knew what was happening that it was an 'out of body' ritual.

They cried out, please he has died, his body already stinks of odor, and Jesus said, no, he is not dead. But then a bit later he then seemed to change his mind by saying, 'Yes, he is dead.'

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

At that point Jesus was referring to two types of death, first, the one where we believe we die from a physical standpoint, this is where Jesus was saying, no, he is not dead, he is sleeping.

However, when he appeared to be contradicting himself, saying that he is dead, he was referring how we are all dead when we come to this realm. Of course, they did not fully understand that back then.

Finally, Jesus went to Lazarus standing outside of the cave where they had laid him to rest, and he simply called his name, somehow Lazarus heard the name and awakened. The ritual was over.”

Matthias then asked, “How did they know it was a ritual if they all thought he was dead?”

“Easy, Lazarus told them where he went. He had left his body and traveled into the future, he began to tell them what the future was like, but Jesus stopped him, and said, this is only for those who are awakened.

Now, let me get back to what happened to Mary. When Jesus learned of her predicament, she came to bless him with oils and fragrances and perfumes. This was not just some idle fancy, she was seeking for his hand in matrimony.

Mary understood this ritual could not take place if she was married, and she was seeking Jesus for marriage. Jesus accepted her, and the two of them were married, in the Bible it was called the Wedding at Cana.

Now at this point everything became confused as to what is revealed in the scriptures for they are quite out of order, but what followed may help you better understand the ritual of the day.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

After Jesus married Mary, the gods of the sacrifices were furious, and instead of blessing Simon their father, they cursed him with Leprosy. He was then known as Simon the leper. He then repented of his following BAAL, and Jesus healed him.

The god's remained furious, and then they sent out a lie that was spread everywhere saying, now that Mary was no longer a virgin, they then said, she was a whore.

Of course, none of that was true. At that point the dark ones sent seven angry spirits after Mary in the attempt to possess her. They were so angry they wanted to destroy not only Mary, but Jesus also.

However, when Jesus saw that Mary had been attacked by seven spirits, he healed her and protected her from that ever occurring again. Yet from there on out, Mary was spoken of as the great whore possessed with demons.

Wait, it doesn't end there. They then concocted the story that Jesus Mother, who was called Miriam, which was another name for MARY, and she was the one that remained a virgin. That was hard to buy since she had many children.

This is where the Virgin birth came from. In their anger they devised a plan to implement all this that happened to Mary upon the Mother of Jesus.

It was all part of the gods sacrificial rituals that created this fake story. It was fake news... However, Jesus did have a human Father named Joseph that sent his seed into Miriam and that is how Jesus was born, not because anything the Gods had done."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Beth then spoke, "Why was it that James was never mentioned as a brother. If my memory is right, it said, Martha, Mary and Lazarus, but no James."

"First of all, things were purposefully manipulated so the truth would never come out. Secondly, John was known as the Beloved disciple, so also was Lazarus known as the beloved disciple. But where is Lazarus ever mentioned as a disciple of Jesus, until it mentions him as Simon's son?

It is doubtful there were two known as the beloved disciple if Lazarus was not really a disciple. Therefore, putting the code together, John was Lazarus, and we know John was a brother to James and the two of them were children of Zebedee.

Zebedee was obviously a ritual name for the same person as Simon. When Jesus called James and John, Zebedee was also with them in a fishing boat, but Zebedee was not called yet, because he was not one of them, he was obeying the fallen gods, therefore he honored their wishes.

Zebedee was a name that signified as being one of Jehovah's, his wife is mentioned as Salome. However, no wife is ever mentioned about Simon the Father to Mary, Martha and Lazarus, because these stories were broken apart to confuse people."

Mark then interjected again with a thought, "But how did you know where the Holy Grail was."

Marie looked at Mark and said with this amazing expression upon her face, "Mark, I was Mary. The night Jesus was killed John grabbed the chalice and gave it to me to hide. That is how I knew where the

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Chalice was, because I planted it when I was in the secret chamber of the Abbey with John-Mark after we had fled for our lives.”

“Mark replied, “I figured as much, I just wanted to hear it come from your own lips, and that means...”

Marie interrupted, “Just a second Mark... Do you remember the last supper painting by Leonardo da Vinci? What if I told you they removed the Holy Grail, the chalice from that painting, it is no longer there?”

“Beth replied, “What do you mean it is no longer there it is sitting in front of Jesus?”

“Marie chuckled and said, “Honey, better look again.”

Matthias said, “Wait I have copy of the last supper in the other room, let me go get it.”

Matthias grabbed the picture off the wall and brought it into the room, and set it down for all to see.



“Where the hell is the Chalice?” Beth challenged.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

"It is no longer there, it is another one of those changes that have occurred. Notice though, look who is at the right of Jesus? It is none other than me; as Mary. It was supposed to be John. Da Vinci painted this picture when John told him that he took the Chalice and gave it to Mary to hide."

"Matthias wondered, "When did Da Vinci meet John the Beloved?"

"Remember the time travel trip of Lazarus, he was sent there by ritual to tell Da Vinci what had occurred. Da Vinci then changed John's picture into Mary, to show where the Chalice had been hidden. But not even Da Vinci was told where it was, because John didn't even know, so he simply removed it from his painting to reveal it was lost.

"But wait?" chimed in Mark, "I have seen this picture and the chalice was there. And John was male not female. The grail was right in front of Jesus."

Beth responded in agreement also. But Matthias said, "I don't ever remember a chalice, I think that was brought out in books that Mary was the Chalice because she was pregnant with Jesus children and thus she became the Holy Grail, or Holy Bloodline, so Da Vinci never added it."

Marie responded, "The time-lines that the both of you are on had been changed but your memory still recalls what had been. The Bloodline was never holy, that was all brought in by the false gods, and they are the ones who sought out blood for lineage purposes. Thus why sacrifices were so important to them.

Mary never had children because Jesus never touched her in the Biblical sense of 'Knowing'. It was a marriage of protection and his

Time-loop Chronicles 3

marrying her protected her from death. He had told her that what they were going to have to go through, no children should have to experience.

Their lives would be in turmoil and always fleeing from death. Mary and Jesus both agreed that it was a marriage of protection only, yet she loved him greatly and so did he love her. And once Jesus was removed, then John would take care of all of them. This was a heavy responsibility.

Ironically, Mary Migdala was the one who remained the virgin, not Jesus mother. This is where the idea came to the Roman church to create Nuns, who seemed to be spiritually married to Jesus, but without sex, as this knowledge was once prolific about this interesting couple.

And yet in stark contrast, the dark forces took this knowledge and they labeled Jesus Mother as the virgin and Mary of the Migdala was called the whore. It is amazing how stories are twisted and then evolve into something vastly different than its reality.”

Mark interjected, “What about the stories in Southern France that Mary Magdalena came with young children. Are those stories just myths?”

“Yes and no! If Jesus had children by Mary they would not be small children anymore, before they fled they were living in Ephesus for some years. Mary the Mother of Jesus was known as Miriam, and this is how they differentiated between the two, and she had traveled with John and Mary and a few others.

At the time prior to Jesus death, he commanded John to take his Mother and make her his own mother. Meaning, John was chosen

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

above all disciples and even among Jesus own brothers and sisters to be responsible for his own mother.

If you do not remember, here is what was said, "When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he said unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son!"

This was referring to John the Beloved.

Mary was Jesus wife, so when John the beloved disciple, and Mary, who was now Jesus widow, were with Miriam, they were considered her two children, and she was their mother. And from there the story was spun into a spider's web.

Now getting back to Matthias, he is in a different timeline like Sunilo. He is the doorway for the other souls to enter crossing the bridge."

Beth wondered, "But why would Da Vinci have ever painted it with the chalice if he was told what had occurred?"

"He painted it before John met him during one timeline, that is the one you recall, and therefore the chalice was there, but when John met him he removed the chalice and changed John's picture to Mary because she became the female version of the beloved, because she had the grail not John."

Everyone in the room gasped, and then Mark responded, "But when did you go into the Abbey to plant the Chalice? You said when 'I' was not looking? But you were not there when I was being regressed."

"Mark, don't you get it yet, you are John, you are John-Mark, you were John the Beloved, the youngest disciple of Jesus. We were there

Time-loop Chronicles 3

together. You were my brother of Zebedee. I was with you when we first went to the Abbey, not the second time you went to the abbey. Therefore, I didn't tell you that I hid the chalice in there.

You were too busy sending a message to the future and didn't have time to see what I was doing. When you were pouring sand in the wooden/iron box, I was putting the chalice somewhere else."

"Wait a second!" Beth asked, "Can you set the story straight, what was Jesus real name, was it Jesus?"

"His Greek name was I'esus Christos, it meant the Anointed Savior. It looks like this."

Marie then started writing it down for all to see.

Ιησούς Χριστός.

Do you notice the 'X', in Greek the name Christ begins with an X? This is where it morphed into X-mas during the pagan ritual assault.

His Hebrew name was. Jeshua ben-Joseph. He went by the name Joshua, son of Joseph. But he was recognized by either the teacher, master or son of the heavenly Father, in contrast to the false gods."

Beth again wanted to know something that never made sense. "Why was he called Emmanuel? It says a child shall be born and his name shall be Emmanuel? But he was never called Emmanuel, was he?"

Marie continued... "Much of Matthew and the virgin birth story as I stated earlier, was all added by the fallen ones. They wanted desperately to infer that the Gods came among humanity.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

They named him Emmanuel, which means, 'God with us.' You must understand, they were laying the ground work for a false Christ. Their Christ was of the gods brought from Lucifer himself.

It was an alien interaction where one of the gods impregnated a female and brought about a false Christ, or should I say many Christ's over the ages, because they are still among us.

I must stop now and prepare all of us in the time to come for the news, where I reveal the second scroll that was hidden with the chalice, in that scroll it reveals the interpretation of the lost Prophecy, since we all agree, it didn't make much sense to us as it was written.

Maybe now it will help us understand..."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(33) Mark Writes the Divine Secret Garden under the name John

Mark spent the next many months living in France and writing four important books. The messages on the clay jars gave him a clear idea how to visibly identify the key points and write everything in such a way, that it would be understood by the true children who came here and are now within their selected soul groups.

These messages were scribed on to the jars themselves revealing how each book needed to contain clues concerning what Walter had revealed.

These were the clues,

1. “The Mystery of the Harvest?”
2. “The Mystery of Humans and the Watchers.”
3. “Egypt’s Pyramids hold the secret to the EYES.”
4. “The Spirit Domain and its encoding!”

As the days went on and Mark began to write, every step of the way there was a power helping him identify the mysteries, unlocking the clues, and revealing the ancient parables.

It was not a simple task, everything had to be simplified and generic, so that when a person was waking up from their sleep, they would begin to understand the message at differing levels of awareness. It had to be this way, so the dark Lords would laugh it all off as pure nonsense.

The true seeds as Mark had learned about were the true children of the Caelestus Pater and the Caelestus Mater, along with their son

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

the Panem Vitae. We know them today as the Father and Mother and the Christ.

Mark was changing, he was becoming the words he had been writing, and seeing deeply into the message. At this time Beth and Marie went back to the states, and finalized plans to move back to France permanently.

They all knew deep inside that things were about to change drastically on the planet. They both finished reading the Lost Journal as well as the initial book Walter had created showing Tim Trovel's research via the notepads.

Everyone now understood the importance of what was occurring and their individual portion within the plan.

Mark had spent nine months completing all four books, most everything was revealed from memory as well as personal guidance from beyond.

Each of the four books took on its own power, yet they were all coordinated to be written one after the other. Anyone trying to read them out of order; would leave one very confused.

After lifetimes of learning the esoteric, along with the hidden mysteries of life, Mark became fluent in how to drop codes in to his writings so the words themselves would not be as important as the hidden message.

This was done to help the awakened know where these mysteries had come from, that the Panem Vitae had revealed them within their inner being. Not a soul would be able to explain the importance in

Time-loop Chronicles 3

detail, they would just know the inner sanctum of reality within their spirit.

Mark had been instructed that there would arise enemies everywhere in the attempt to destroy or demonize the work. He was then told the books must of themselves do the job and he was to walk away and basically disconnect from the reader.

Of course, learning what Matthias had done where he sacrificed all, even his home to become a staging house to finish this work. Because of his wealth he was able to do this.

Mark, one day after learning the secret to Matthias as being the door to the group, he told him that in the past time-line where Matthias had no memory of, that he was never rich, he never had money.

No matter what he did he was blocked from ever having anything, because the dark lords knew his heart and that he would use that money for spiritual purposes of helping the lost children to become more aware after the Father and Mother awakened their heart.

However, the power against Matthias was so strong he knew within his heart, that something dark and foreboding was causing him to fail in everything he tried to achieve in. This caused him to peer deeper into the mysteries of life revealing that no matter what the dark side does, eventually it always comes back to help the ones being assaulted.

When Sunilo became the bridge, it helped the others to break through from the dense fog of delusion, awakening them to comprehend the mysteries of life. This created the path where

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Matthias and Sunilo were brought within a different dimension of the mind.

Matthias finally was able to break free from the curse having owned nothing when he came into a large amount of money and sure enough to his character he used it all to become the door, which helped the rest within his soul-group by sacrificing all that he had for them.

It was then Mark was shown that Money was always something that was a strong inherent development within Matthias as he was always intelligent when it came to currency and transactions.

Mark then learned, that Matthias was indeed, Matthew the tax collector for the group of twelve during the time of Jesus. However, there is much more to this story.

Now everything began to make sense. Matthias and Sunilo were soul friends. That is why what one did the other seemed to be proficient in it also. Both set up this plan while being in the afterlife, they were instructed how to become a distraction to the matrix, so none would be the wiser.

If it wasn't for their plan, none of this could have happened. Walter was the one who instructed them both on how to play their roles. And yet like always, being born into these avatar computerized bodies, the information was removed from the mind, but not the soul.

After Mark was given this knowledge, he then discovered the name of his first book, and this would be become the most important as the very first book held the glue and the key code to interpret the rest of the books.

The title was finalized, he called it,

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“The Forbidden Knowledge – The Children of the Harvest.”

This was a trumpet sound alerting all true souls to further their awakening. Therefore, only those that had been awakened prior would heed the call. As it was said long ago, many are called but few are chosen.

When Mark had the book published, he did something that was very odd, very strange, he made it so that it would be free to anyone who chooses, by simply going on the Internet and reading them.

Yet at the same time he sold it through third party brokers so that those who were not proficient online might still recognize the call from third party distributors where they could have the books in their hands.

Mark also had the books priced where he would not accept even a penny, it was free of charge to some and third-party, at costs, to others. For the truth be known, where Mark and the rest are going, they don't need no stinkin' money.

As the months went on, the last four books became a reality within an illusion, what a concept.

Book two was called, **“Alien seed - The Virtual World of God's & Humans.”**

Book three was called, **“The Mystery of the Pyramid with the all-seeing eye.”**

And finally book four, **“The keys to the Master Code and the Spirit world.”**

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

And there they all were being transformed from the message on the clay jars to now the inevitable output of the direct teachings of the Panem Vitae, and through the ancient message John the Beloved sent long before, as the final memorandum before the Harvest and the waking up of the true divine seeds.

1. "The Mystery of the Harvest?"
2. "The Mystery of Humans and the Watchers."
3. "Egypt's Pyramids hold the secret to the EYES."
4. "The Spirit Domain and its encoding!"

As they morphed into-

- (1) "The Forbidden Knowledge – The Children of the Harvest."
- (2) "Alien seed- The Virtual world of God's & Humans."
- (3) "The Mystery of the Pyramid with the all-seeing eye."
- (4) "The keys to the Master Code and the Spirit world."

It was completed, hundreds of years of knowledge meshed into four simple to read books, with a hidden message that only a certain few could or would ever understand at any given time-loop.

Mark then called Marie and Beth and told them to return from the states, that it was now time. They had revealed to him that it would be a month before they could get everything accomplished.

Mark then decided to write '**one more**' book, this time revealing the message of the Gods who rule over and control this planet. He didn't beat around the bush, he knew this message could get him in lots of trouble. But it didn't matter anymore, because he would not remain in this world much longer.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Within the next month he took all the information that he had uncovered, and he used it to finish book five, as a bonus book for the other four. And he titled it, **“The Forbidden Legacy of the Gods – The Most Critical Biblical Exposé Ever.”**

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(34) Interpretation of the Prophecy

There had been another scroll Marie had found simply because she had this hidden memory of where it was located, and it is the second part of the prophecy William and Giovanni discovered when they were together 800-years prior. It is the interpretation of the John-Mark prophecy and the meaning from a scientific point of view on energy frequencies.

Interpretation of Mark 17

Picture yourself alone, and now see yourself reduplicated thousands of times. Each one of you is in type, likened unto a room, yet in each room there are distinct peculiarities, or slight differences.

Each room is separated by a door, and each door is locked. Our brain in the human body is a frequency stabilizer. It creates the lock on our door. What we experience, what we learn, things around us, are all within a frequency lock within the third dimension.

If we were able to unlock just one door we would see another frequency, it may or may not be similar, but it is still the soul-mind operating within a different regularity. Just like when one has many dreams, and none of them are interlocking.

At that moment two doors are opened side by side; a parallel world will have unveiled itself to the awareness. Now let's say we walk into the secondary room and the door behind us slams shut and locks. We would now view our new world with its slight changes, however, since we were aware of the frequency earlier we would also become aware of the changes.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

While we are in the 3rd dimension we are separated from other parallel worlds, which we are also part of due to frequencies. Therefore the 4th dimension contains all the rooms that we explore, yet once we get locked into one room then that is all we are aware of at that level, unless something anomalous occurs, where we enter or can see within another room.

However, there is another conundrum that we must be aware of, and that is merging into dual or multiple time lines. What happens when a door is not locked after one enters through.

Then a strange phenomenon occurs called, bleed through, or dual frequency overlap. What this means is, if one can bypass a lock, and the door somehow does not reset or lock behind them after one enters another room, it leaves open access for to see both worlds at once creating a residual and dual frequency.

Try to fathom this quirkiness, each room is programmed for you, even though an entire world is surrounding your consciousness, and even with all the people that seem to exist in your world, each person has their own frequency lock within the body.

What we witness or perceive is beyond us, and it is coming from within the matrix computer through the programmed brain via millions of files. There is nothing beyond or external from our holographic bodies. The brain is an interface connected to the mainframe of the computer.

Each body is an interface including parallel lives; which all connect to the same program but are separated by frequency controls. Therefore, our body is linked directly to the mainframe. And if a door between ourselves is unlocked we then automatically process the new frequency along with the old one.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Try to grasp this at this level of awareness, the computer is 4th dimensional, as a quantum computer. Our bodies are 3rd dimensional as simply one of the interfaces of the entire program. Our body is a world unto itself.

Yet how do two or more people/bodies recognize the same world if we are all separated? Because whatever world we exist in at whatever frequency level, that same frequency is coded within everyone else at that level.

Let's say a door is unlocked and opened between worlds, that door is only unlocked for the body/individual. So how would anyone else recognize the change if it is individualized.

The answer is complicated in that somehow an individual is linked between two or more time-loops and the result creates a mass connection consensus between two or more worlds.

Try to imagine setting up dominoes in a line where if you knock one over and then all of them fall throughout the duration. Now imagine the dominoes coming to a point where it knocks over not one but two unique dominoes, which also are both lined up as to continue the fall at a fork in the proverbial road.

A dual event would have been created and, yet it would remain single, because this dual line is the same line split in two. It is tantamount in having two choices and instead of making one decision, somehow both choices play's out.

This is what you might call an entanglement, or when two interfaces collide and create new data for the computer to process. In so doing it allows the interface of the same frequency to create two different time lines.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

If a change takes place or is added into the program, then that change will then domino effect into the future. And the change would instantly appear right at the nexus point where it had begun traveling down two different roads. And the two would appear similar, but one will remain in the mind and the other will appear via the programmed senses, visually, audibly etc.

The one will become a memory, the other will be the new programmed three-dimensional world. Both would be at the same exact time. And those who began at the same world frequency when the dominoes' split, will possibly recognize the diversity. And those who were of the secondary parallel dimension will not recognize anything having occurred, because it hadn't for them.

The question we might ask is, 'how would others be involved if this was via one interface that created the issue?' This is due when the door is opened it created what is called a leak. Just like when a water pipe fractures, it then leaks.

A single fracture on any part of the pipe can still flood an entire room. Thus, one mishap can create a new reality or in this case, a new illusion. Now picture it this way, let's return to our room, this is our individualized room called the avatar body, but it is the interface that allows for our entire world to appear.

Now within our room/world, we see everyone else in the world also within our room, this is because each room has the same frequency. Only one of us, would have to unlock the door to another room that belongs to our individual program.

However, once the door is unlocked, it spawns a leak of a new awareness that begins to flood the room. Everyone who was of the single frequency is now being bombarded or flooded with a new

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

frequency, this new frequency is the domino effect and why it allows for everyone else in the same room to become aware of the change.

Yet, why wouldn't the interfaces of the next parallel dimension also have the door unlocked. Wouldn't the same principle apply to them since the leak opened the door.

Well, in truth it does, but the difference of those in the parallel world are not under the same frequency, they did not change. They were never aware of the other world.

However, when the door opened, they become aware because all those from the previous world are telling them that something odd has occurred and that things have changed. This is how they become aware, but they most likely will not believe them since it was never part of their frequency, their frequency did not change.

So, they will fight and argue to keep their world intact, and denounce everyone else as crazed wackos with memory problems. They will not see the change, the change only applied to the world of the same frequency.

Then how do objects change or sometimes remain the same as a residual of the effect. This is because of the leak in the pipe. Some of the memory does manifest as a sensory conduit.

This leads into the most important aspect of this conundrum. If things that you once remembered can disappear and become something else or simply vanish, then wouldn't this also effect people, couldn't they just disappear?

Absolutely, and this will also be recognized by those of the dual frequency overlap. At times people might change, become someone

Time-loop Chronicles 3

different. Their personality may have warped, or they simply vanish as if they had never been there.

Let me try to explain this where you can understand. Each world we enter is called a frequency, it is nothing more than an energy regularity. Since the 3rd dimension does not allow 4th dimensional protocols, then every room in the 3rd dimension must be the dominant room.

Understand dominancy. Each world has its own frequency that dominates or rules over their world. Beyond residual overlap, most worlds only allow for one visual interface that would be common to all bound to that frequency. This way we are not witnessing changes morphing every second of every day, which would confuse, disorient and literally cause people to go insane.

The world you are witnessing even if it has changed is the dominant world. That is why one may notice something changed because the world they are now viewing is the dominant world.

Just like dreams, one may enter a world that seems similar and, yet it is not the same world one is living in before they began the dream, and as soon as they awaken, that dream world vanishes and the dominant world takes over control.

Now we must get to the point of the Prophecy and what it was revealing. If you noticed it declared that the children of the Father and Mother would vanish, and the rest would remain.

According to the prophecy it revealed that those who are ready are those who are sealed before the climate of hell begins on earth. The Father will seal his children that are ready for the Harvest, but they will not be removed, yet.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

No one has properly understood what being sealed really meant. The true children that are ready to escape this world will be sealed with a new frequency. They will not be removed from the world, they will simply be governed by a new frequency as witnesses as to what will occur.

This new frequency will simply cause them to vanish, and yet remain. They will become ghosts among the living. Let us return to the prophecy,

1. Our Lord revealed he shall truly return and gather the elect from the four corners of the Earth.
2. Yet only those who are invisible shall be gathered, and those who are visible shall be forsaken.

It appears in the last days, just before the Harvest, the true children will be sealed by becoming invisible, they will continue to exist and live as they had been, yet, they will be able to witness everything around them but they themselves will not be touched by the evil and the plagues of the world. They will be sealed until the Harvest removes them.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(35) Agape and Aggie finalize plans

Agape and Aggie became friends with the rest as they were also recognized as being part of the soul group. It was apparent that Agape had vast knowledge as one who understood things deeply.

All of them came together in the cottage and Agape revealed the final plans as only he could do.

“Today we are gathered together to discuss some final plans and understand how our world operates. If there was one question, one single question any of you had, what would it be when discussing our world?”

Mark immediately responded, “If our world has technology right now that far surpasses anything we could have possibly imagined even in science fiction, then where are we really heading?”

“Oh Mark, you cheated didn’t you, reading too many of your Father’s books.”

Everyone chuckled...

“Okay, let’s take what Mark said and add to it. If our technology can do things at the rate of development we have witnessed in a very short time, then wouldn’t it make sense we are at the point of creating the matrix?”

Everyone nodded to the affirmative.

“But how does that make everyone feel?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Marie then jumped in, "I feel it reveals that we have come to a nexus, a point of no return."

"Ah, I see you have been doing a little cheating too."

Again, everyone hooted a little harder this time.

"The reason I have brought this to your awareness is to reveal, our society appears to have all the building blocks to enter the future for thousands of years. But what is wrong with this theory?"

"Beth then joined in, "It is apparent with the time-loop there is no future."

"Exactly, well stated Beth. The problem with what we are witnessing is that what is occurring is not real, it is a simulation, and in this simulation, there is an end. But why would we end right at the point of the greatest potential in development in the history of humanity?

Anyone?"

There was silence and then Aggie spoke, "Because what we are witnessing in this development is simply a copy of what has occurred long ago when we actually did move on into the future where we had this type of technology, in fact it is how the Matrix was initially designed and created that enabled virtual worlds.

However, since it was created, those who wanted power and control had no desire to see the matrix fall into the hands of just anyone. Therefore, they simply recreated our old world via the matrix computations, using this new technology that we are now recognizing, while following a previous design of a world that once existed. Our

Time-loop Chronicles 3

world was designed and created by the very matrix technology that we are now learning about.

However, before we get to that point where the matrix could fall into the hands of anyone, the program simply ends, and we never quite catch the rabbit.”

“Exactly! We are at the Nexus of the very program itself. It cannot go anywhere else, however, as we close in on to the end of the program we are beginning to witness the very quantum mechanics, which was used in creating the very device that is able to simulate our world.

That is why finding the Serpentine’s Mirror was so important. Because the mirror is evidence of our simulated world. And thus, we may be able to use the mirror to undo its very foundation. However, that is not our goal, we are not here to destroy the matrix, we are here to learn how to break free from its grip.

The question is, what if we could move forward into the future? Is there any reason why we may not be able to accomplish this feat if it were possible?”

Mark then raised his hand, and Agape called on him, “Go ahead Mark, I have a feeling you will know this answer.”

“The one thing that no civilization can move forward from is moral depravity. It is not possible, it effects intelligence, it effects strength of reasoning and discernment, it effects the way we live. It is the kryptonite against any nation, country or continent from moving forward in knowledge and wisdom.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

It is simply not possible. No more than it is possible if you cut off the legs of a frog, the frog can no longer jump forward. Moral integrity is our creative legs.”

“That is correct Mark, very good. And this is the very cornerstone to the nature of why we couldn't move forward even if we had the opportunity. Moral depravity destroys future possibilities. And there is nothing any one can do to change this. Moral decline will always lead to absolute destruction. And voila, you have your time-loop.

Every empire collapsed because the people failed to learn this easy equation. The idea that anyone can serve themselves at the expense of everyone else is the formula for annihilation.

Some have conjectured that there is no good or evil there are different perceptions, just like we might see an ant and step on them destroying their entire village of ants, and think nothing of it.

Some have believed it is no different than a non-human species, possibly alien that they might react that way towards humanity. They conclude it is not good or evil, it is simply a different expression of one's philosophy. However, who can tell me what is wrong with this theory?”

Marie spoke up, “Good and evil should not be an individual expression. Just like when we have children, it our job to teach them what is right from what is wrong. These are not individual expressions but millenniums of proper conduct between one another.

That is why we have spiritual avatars who have come among the people and even if they have different protocols, they all basically teach the same thing when it comes to conduct and expression. ‘

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Therefore, if someone else came on the scene and began to lead with another expression that was not based in the highest spiritual optimum or ideal, it is not just another expression it is a failed expression, and whatever race that believes or adheres to that expression, has already proven they have fallen.

Isn't this what our ancestors have revealed to us about the fallen gods who have come to this earth in all their alien costumes, they decimate one place and move on to terminate another? This is not a higher expression, it is parasitical. And this is never validated throughout any universe. It is simply wrong, period!"

"Excellent Marie, I could not have worded it any better. Truth and error and good and evil are not conceptualized ideas representing one idealist view above another. There are not many different versions of good, there is only one. 'Do unto others as you would have them do unto you., thus, it is Universal.'

The golden rule is by far the only rule that establishes continuity and unity among all races and among one another. If anyone veers from this rule of good, then they are operating from the rule of evil."

Matthias then jumped in, "So basically it is all about love, love is the key, right?"

"Matthias, it is always about love but remember all the amazing things we have learned, especially now that all of you have read Walter's book having Tim's notepads, as well as William's book that Mark has so wonderfully completed.

The dark ones live on the belief of mixing good and evil. They use the light to confuse and then bring on in Darkness, that is why I took the name Agape, it literally means outflowing concern. This is the

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

correct love that we all must adhere to. However, the world has been deceived into believing that love in general should be accepted.

The love the world has was compromised by Sol Malum and the Diabolis is that they created a false love, in Latin it is called, Philo, a love that includes lust and desire. A love that demands ownership and obedience. This type of love is skewed.

Some believe we are to love all things, because the nature of love is simply love. Again, we have learned this is not so. We can love one and forgive them of their mistakes, this is something we must do.

But we can never love evil. When you love anything, you give your energy to that which you love. If the Love is not the correct love it is a fake love garnered by the deception of the mixture of good and evil. And that energy is misused and must be deleted”

Beth then stated, “Didn’t Christ teach us to love our enemies, and to do good to them which persecute us?

“Not exactly Beth, let me try to explain the mystery, he taught you to Love that which is good but to eschew evil. When those of the fallen ones came before him, he didn’t just put out his arms and accept them with great love and give them all a bunch of hugs.”

Again, fierce laughter.

“Why? Because, he would never give his energy from the Father over to darkness, like throwing pearls before swine.

That is why he said often, get behind me Satan, or you are the children of the devil. He didn’t sit down with them and fellowship. He set rock solid boundaries.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Now when he went among the people that were sinners, he did sit down with them to break bread and give them aid. Do you know what the difference was?"

Mark said, "I believe so."

Mark, not for nothing, but let someone else take a crack at this."

He pointed to Matthias and said, "Want a crack at it?"

Matthias sat forward in his chair and began speaking. "I believe what he was teaching us, is that the sinners he was among and he aided and gave help and even forgave them, they knew they were sinners, they knew they screwed up and made mistakes. There was no pretense of them being good.

I believe he even told them that because they admitted to their faults and failures that he would be able to forgive them. But if one is living a life of darkness, and they see nothing wrong with it, then it was those he would not help, nor did he even try.

Therefore, I believe when he said, love your enemies, and do go to them which persecute you, he was speaking about those who were deceived, and did not know who they were, but they understood they were sinners and wanted to change, if it all possible.

Thus, extending a loving hand would be a great help for them to awaken. But the evil ones would not awaken, and he didn't even give them a chance, at least not yet. They had to learn the hard way."

"Exactly Matthias, remember how long we have been stuck in the mire and darkness of this simulated world of death. And yet with all the love the Father and Mother has for us, including Christ's love for you,

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

no one can whisk us up out of here no matter how much love they have.

We must be transformed by the renewing of our minds, to become like them so when we are removed from this realm we shall never return for any reason.

We must exit the false façade of humanity and enter back into our divine family of spirits. And the only way this can ever occur; is that we must overcome ourselves, overcome the world and overcome the dark lords.

Even the Father and Mother will not allow their children to return into their kingdom until all of them have qualified. So, we just don't throw love around like it is candy. We must become love, but at the same time never surrender our energy over to darkness."

Beth responds again, "I truly understand what you are saying, but many will ask, then how do we respond to those who are of darkness if it is not via love, do we hate them?"

"Absolutely not, you see this is the problem many struggle with. When you begin to take on the mind of the Father, you love all those who belong to him, whether they are awakened or asleep, knowledgeable or ignorant.

This does not mean we hate those who do not belong to him. It represents that we become indifferent. Neither love or hate is in our heart, it is as if there is nothing. Jesus told them, get behind me Satan, he didn't serve them, he didn't break bread with them, he rebuked them, because he discovered their true intentions. You shall know them by their fruits.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

This way we do not judge unto condemnation nor do we toss our energy away as if throwing pearls before swine. We simply become indifferent. There is no feeling one way or the other.

However, now listen carefully, it doesn't mean we change in our personal actions. As we develop the divine character we must become that which is true, and we must continue to be like that no matter who we deal with unless there is obviously something wrong.

Here is an example: If we see someone fall, we immediately help and even give them aid and pick them up. We do not spend time trying to decide who they really are. If you are the type that does good things for others, then you will be that way no matter what.

This is because you are becoming a being of Agape love. And that way you are not throwing away energy, nor are you acting as if you must be good, which is also a form of throwing away energy. You will be what you truly are inside.

Just like Mark writing all these books, he knows that both good and evil will read his work, a work of love, and he gave it freely to all, no matter who reads them. He doesn't sit around and make plans to make sure that darkness does not get a hold of his books. He leaves that up to the Father and Mother.

However, at the same time he knows the evil ones will not understand, so there is no gain or loss, it is indifferent. It will not affect him, because he is separating himself from the energy flow. He is the messenger but not truly the author.

Therefore, we become love like our Father and Mother which are love, but we do not love that which is not of love, unless we discern it is someone stumbling and not trying to destroy. This is an error that was

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

brought in by Lucifer long ago when he attempted to thwart the Father's realm by adding evil as a mixture unto good.

He knew this error would create confusion, which then leads to an antichrist mind that there is no good or evil, all is just an expression."

Agape then began to finish his discourse, "Now my friends; my very dear friends of this soul-group, this is the only way to break free from the bondage of darkness.

We must become the rule of love, and that means, do unto others as we would have them do unto us. That is why we have spent lifetimes learning, growing and sharing, so that others may be helped to leave this prison of the mind.

We have been gathered together, not to simply break free and leave the world behind, we have come to understand how valuable the lessons we have learned are and how we opted to share them with those of the Father and Mother.

Those that think they can outwit the matrix and leave on their own without truly understanding the importance of their individualized connection to a greater good, are fooling themselves.

No one is good, no one at this level is where we should be, and never will be. The difference is; the true seeds want to return home and become who they once were, the false seeds have no such desire, unless they are beginning to repent, otherwise, their world is here, and they are plenty satisfied with it.

That is why like the cocoon changing into a Butterfly, we are going to change in the twinkling of an eye, from being human into a being of love."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Beth jumped in, “Yea... Agape love!!!”

Everyone spoke at the same time saying, “Amen to that!”
Laughter ensued.

Agape continued... Thus, our acts of goodness that we share is a powerful life enhancer because a multitude of wrong doings can be forgiven among those of the true seeds. But if we are in it for ourselves, then our own faults are then magnified, and cannot be forgiven, and thus we'll remain behind until we truly awaken. Therefore, show mercy so mercy can be given in return.

I have gathered you all here to understand the real message that was encoded within long ago. Lucifer came on the scene and told us it is about service to self. But we came from the realm of service to others. It might sound like a sound bite, but it is who we really are.

However, our service, our personalized connection is not being created by our own senses, because of ourselves we can do nothing. If the Father and Mother and the true Christ were not lining this up according to their will, we would never reconnect to reality.

Therefore, there is no such thing about creating your own reality as you have heard many say, only the Father and Mother can create reality, all we can create is more of the same illusion that keeps us imprisoned.

Everything that has occurred happens beyond what we fully understand. When Giovanni was crucified along with William and Sunilo of the past, do you think they wanted to be executed in this fashion?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Do you think Christ wanted to be executed like this? He prayed bitterly for hours where blood dripped out of his own sweat. That is how much he did not want to die, especially, in this manner.

They were led into it by a higher power. They didn't want to die, any more than anyone here does. Therefore, our lives are not truly under our control.

A higher power is working things out, and connecting the dots and filling in the puzzle pieces. This means, if we do not allow the divine will to be completed then we won't be able to do it on our own. Let me paraphrase, when we interfere using our humanness, we tend to screw things up."

Laughter...

"But the good news is my friends, all of you here including my wife and I have been led to finalize the plans of our leaving the matrix, and while we have been led to this doorway, each of us has spent much time helping others find their own door. And this is more precious than any element of riches.

However, always remember, at every Harvest time, only the few ever make it in the harvest the many or the majority are recycled. It is a process, a progression that takes a lot of time for some.

Even now we only know in part, hopefully in time all of this will begin to make sense. And it all comes down to faith, with faith all things are possible, without faith not even the simple things can manifest.

With all the connecting dots and intricate pieces; most of this occurred beyond our own conscious awareness. At times we were able to see through the dynamics of the plan, but most of the time it was

Time-loop Chronicles 3

being directed and orchestrated by the living power of our Father and Mother.

And why is this good news, because nothing was ever left to us to complete the agenda. As we have awakened over the many past lives, we have been subtly given the help to guide and lead us according to a higher plan. It is the Father and Mother who choose when to awaken us and how. We do not arbitrarily one day get up and say, it is time to awaken.

Therefore, your being here today is not because you were all so wise and good, it was because you were guided and directed to surrender your soul back over to the one who created it.

And the rest was accomplished without having to even understand what one must do to be part of the change. Meaning, we are changing into that butterfly as a natural progression, just as a baby forms in its mother's womb, it just happens via the law of progression.

Thus, our many lives in hell was tantamount of the Father and Mother and the Christ, turning lemons into lemonade.

In a few days we are all going to meet on the beach, and from there we are going home. But before this occurs, it is time to truly become aware of how we have been led by the spirit of truth, and learn how we got here and why."

Marie got up and gave Agape a huge hug with tears in her eyes, and said, "That was beautiful, just beautiful..."

And everyone surrounded around and gave each other a tearful and most endearing hug.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(36) The Mystery of the Mirrored Strategy

Finally, the moment of destiny had begun. Mark, Marie, Beth, Agape, and Aggie had all made their way south down to the beach.

They chose an area where they were alone, and no one could disturb them. Agape chose this time to reveal, that Matthias was also coming but he had to make a small detour.

Unbeknownst to the others, Matthias went to the train depot to pick up none other than Sunilo, who had flown in from India to Paris on the request of Agape, and William footed the bill. Sunilo then took the train to Marseilles.

While the five were on the beach waiting for their amazing departure, they talked to one another as Marie led the conversation.

“After spending a lot of time reading the material William had left behind. I went through a myriad of emotions as memories from times long past came back home to roost in my consciousness awareness. The moment we had spent together, and the time we were a family all came back to me while reading.

I felt at times lost, and then like magic I felt totally secure. I knew all things would work out for the best.”

Beth then chimes in, “I know exactly what you are talking about, the moments, the déjà vu that entered my mind was so real, I could feel each moment. And to know, that we made it, that we were at the supper of the great feast, it was all so comforting. And to witness how so many others from all walks of life, from all periods of time were also there.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“I know Beth,” as Mark responded, “Just reading the account I could feel that I was there, and yet because of the strangeness and duality of time it doesn’t appear that we made it yet. But we know we did, because we are already there in some mystical sense.”

Suddenly, Matthias came over the hill having this area of content about him and walking beside him was Sunilo, having a huge smile upon his face. The bridge and the door were both coming back to their roots from ages long gone.

Now there were seven.

As they all greeted each other, the rest made themselves known to Sunilo who for the first time since falling into the prison of the mind they were meeting a long-lost soul whom they had all been close friends with.

Agape who had walked over about 100-yards to left under a rock overhang, had then motioned the rest to follow. As they had come together, Agape, asked them all to sit in a circle, a very compact circle. All seven of them were close enough to touch each other as they all sat with their legs crossed and their knees all touching one another.

Agape asked Marie to go into her back-pack and retrieve the Serpentine’s Mirror. He then asked her to set it in the middle between all of them.

Marie then asked everyone to reach out with both hands and with the thumb and index finger, grab a portion of the mirror.

Everyone reached out and grabbed the mirror, fourteen thumbs were on the face of the mirror while their index finger of each one propped it up so as the Mirror was about five inches off the ground.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Agape had made mention, "Don't fret, we are not using a Ouija board, there is a purpose to this seeming madness. We must all touch the mirror to activate it, to redirect to our source soul so we can then be removed from the matrix.

The mirror then activated and began to flash red, as it had done when changes were to be made. But then it flashed white, yellow and blue. Something was happening. Everyone was saying within themselves that they could feel energy pouring through them.

It was astounding, and it sent tingles down everyone's spine and the hair on their arms was standing. There was no doubt something mysterious was occurring, and the excitement along with some reservations were parading through the human mind.

It was now time to begin, as they all began to look at one another to see expressions upon each other's face as they were about to enter the matrix core.

No one said a word, they were all concentrating upon each other along with the mirror. And then like magic there was a flash, a flash of light so bright, it made one another feel as though they entered a trance. But they were all very much awake, but there was a feeling as if they had no control, and it was prevalent among them all.

It was as if the mind was separating from the body. As they continued to hold the mirror. Suddenly, the mirror began to show this otherworldly place. None of them understood what it was yet.

This place was a field that expanded beyond sight. And within this field were what appeared to be glass cages. Everyone was peering deeply into the mirror to see what it was that was being revealed. All were leaning further and further into the mirror.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Within a few seconds, suddenly the mirror began to project out of itself a hologram, everyone was sort of blown backwards and the hologram was placed within the sky above them. It was simply projecting what they were trying to focus on within the mirror.

Now they can see clearly that these glass cages were filled with some sort of liquid, and something was inside of them with what appeared to be human form.

The human form would then change into a ball of light or an orb, and then return to human form, but it didn't leave its cage. Obviously, they were witnessing something within the 4th dimension.

Marie then gasped and blurted out, "Oh my god!"

Everyone was still glued to the sky portraying the scene. It then became all too obvious that what they were seeing was some sort of graveyard. No that is not right, some sort of birthing agency.

There were forms of beings locked inside these crystal cages, these beings were the true children of the Father and Mother. And they were trapped and sealed being locked out from reality.

As they all continued to view this amazing scene, the holograph image allowed them all a closer look at one of the cages as it appeared to zoom in like a moving camera. Every one of them could see the form of the entity inside the cage as well as their appearance, and this entity was obviously sleeping.

Then as they all looked upon this form, the words came across and above all of them sitting on the beach, and it simply revealed, 'Behold, William your Husband, Father and Friend.'

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

As soon as they all saw this, they began to wonder about the depth of their imprisonment and how they had been locked away for so very long. And everything that they had ever done was simply a dream inside a simulated controlled world.

There was this deep feeling of sadness, to realize they had lost their true home and were prisoners. They all understood this by reading the books of William and Walter, but to see it live, now that really hit home to all of them.

As they continued to stare at this entity that they now realize is William, the range of emotions from everyone there began to escalate, until Agape broke the trance by speaking.

“It is now time that we use the matrix to program ourselves out of it. We must begin with Mark, please everyone it is time to say your goodbyes, and remember we will all see each other very shortly, but we will all be different. Remember, just like the butterfly coming from the cocoon.”

Agape was aware, but he didn't fully understand, yet his words were truer than even he knew.

Agape then looked at Mark, and said, “Mark, I want you to continue to hold on to the mirror. As well as everyone else, do not let go. We are about to reprogram the Matrix to release one another.”

Agape looked at Mark and said, remember what I told you back at the cottage as well as I instructed you all? Mark, please say the words exactly what I have shared with you. And begin now.”

Mark wondered though, “What exactly is it that we are doing?”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Agape replied, “I believe we are triggering the hexagon on Saturn as it links to the hexagon on the sun projector, one to point to six, or the interface pointing to the main frame, as Saturn linking to the Sun. This is how we can interface with the Matrix, at least this is what I believe. As with anything it is trial and error.”

Mark trying to gear himself up for this, held tightly to the mirror and then began to speak the code he was given.

“Activate channel 1.6 (one point six)”

Nothing had occurred. Agape asked everyone to concentrate deeper. Mark once again said,

“Activate channel 1.6”

Immediately as everyone was staring at Mark his cell structure began to vibrate. His body began to glow a bright yellow light. It became intense and then subsided.

Not a sound came from anyone but in their mind’s eye they all felt like they were experiencing something unknown and they were in awe. Mark’s body continued to vibrate, and the light continued to diminish.

Finally, when the light faded so also did Mark. Mark had vanished from before their eyes. He was gone, nowhere to be found. His fingers were also missing from the mirror as now there were only six of them holding the mirror.

All of them once again peered into the sky above them to watch the hologram as they all wondered what was to happen next.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Amazingly, something of extraordinaire did occur. The crystal cage that had been closely zoomed upon William, the camera now zoomed to another cage, it was the cage of Mark.

In a moment's notice the crystal cage opened, and Mark's soul was awakened. His eyes opened, and his mind became fully aware. He then lifted his form above the liquid within the glass container and slowly began to lift himself out of it.

Everyone back at the beach was cheering,

"Way to go Mark!"

"Good for you!"

"You worked so hard!"

"You deserve this!"

Beth and Marie were crying with tears of joy. And then everyone paused at the same time, and then they wondered what happens next.

The next thing to occur is the holographic awareness centered back on Williams cage. And then everything was revealed above them in the holographic scene where it unveiled William's interaction with this incredible moment.

William awakens from his eternal prison cage; the cage automatically opens, and he leans up and then slowly pulls himself up and out of the cage and stands upon the ground.

And then something amazing occurs in the visual above, the scene switches to some sort of creating factory zone, it is hard to explain. We

Time-loop Chronicles 3

witnessed the crystal cages, and then we witnessed how they were created.

These cages were made with some sort of mineral that is unknown on earth, and it was fused with invisible aluminum. We all watched as the material was being crafted for these cages where as far as the eye could see these cages were being placed in this massive valley.

What occurred next shocked everyone, as they watched the material being crafted, and the final crystal cage was completed, the material they had left was then used for one more thing.

As everyone was mesmerized by the scene above them. They watched as something was being carved by a laser or some sort of light beam. The material that had been used to create the cages of prison were then being used to create distinct patterns that were 8" X 11" X ½".

Everyone was aghast as they were witnessing the very material that was used as their eternal prison was being crafted into what became known as the Serpentine's Mirrors. But there was more than twelve, there were hundreds and thousands of these mirrors that were being created.

And after each one had been completed, some sort of energy came from out of the ground and from the heavens above, into the mirrors and they all began to glow a bright blue.

The crystal mirrors were then sent over to some sort of moving conveyor belts via Telekinetic energy as they floated there, one right after the other being moved from a factory of where they were being created, into a megalithic warehouse.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

After the crystals were brought inside the warehouse, everyone witnessed within this massive place that there were these flying ships as far as the eye could see. Each one being about 30-feet in length, as what we might call, UFO's, each one is levitating in the air. And each ship was given four crystals, and there were three ships that linked together as if being in unison.

Therefore, twelve crystals were placed within a group of three ships as same sort of internal and external connection, as the three began operating as one.

The four crystal mirrors were then placed into four diverse slots on the ship by the control panel in what may be called the cockpit. And then everything on the ship began to light up, as if the brains of the ship became alive.

It was as if this was the central motherboard for the flying vehicles. This became their all-seeing eye to view and even control all things within the local universal simulation. And then each ship would take off and fly towards the heavens, and within an instant they disappeared, one right after the other, in groups of three, until all mirrors were placed within the ships.

Finally, the scene switched back to William and everyone was trying to contain their emotions and shock.

"I have been released from the prison of deception." As I stand here looking back at the cage I see my reflection. "I remember that soul, it is familiar. But I have not seen this face for ages."

I looked around to the other cages that seemed to go on forever. As far as the eye could see, the cages extended in every direction.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

There was no one else around. Either they were hiding, or they are far away keeping watch and control over the rest of the cages.

Out of the corner of my eye I saw this figure approach me, floating. A figure of light. He then changed into a humanoid being. He walked up to me and I gazed into his eyes and William said. "I know you!"

A deep overpowering feeling of memory flooded into William's consciousness, and yet he could not place where he knew this entity from.

Then lo and behold another came to me, and again, I had a surge of memory hit me like nothing ever before. Yet again, I could not fathom where I had met them.

Finally, the one I saw first looked at me with a kind and endearing expression and said, "William, I am the Chief, remember me? I am Tim."

I didn't know how to respond, "Tim, ah, Chief, you look so different, why is it I remember you, but I can't remember where I know you from, your appearance has changed."

Tim began to speak, "William, I am so sorry, I am asking you to forgive me, for what I did seems almost unforgivable now. As for my appearance, I am who I am as you remembered me before the land of time."

"Chief, what are you speaking of, if it wasn't for you I would not remember anything. You awakened me, you are the one that led me through this entire process by your notepads and then later by the

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

journal, if any one should say they are sorry, it should be me as to why it took me so dang long to awaken.”

“William my friend, I appreciate that more than you could ever know, but let me bring back a memory, and let me reveal unto you our other friend here. This is Caelestus Michael; you knew him as Markie. Mark is here on your behalf to finish what you started or what we all started.”

“Of course, I know Markie, he has made himself known, but his appearance also is different now.”

The two embrace each other with a bear hug with overwhelming happiness.

It was then everyone on the beach could not contain their emotions as they witnessed Mark meet his Father William. Even Agape who always seemed to be in such control of his outer emotions, could not stop the tears running down his face.

It was a joyous moment to behold. And they all felt so blessed to witness this amazing change occur to those they had known for so very long.

It was then instantly the scene above them vanished, it was over. And as they all regained their composure. Agape spoke again.

“Marie, it is now your turn.”

Without any reluctance on her part Marie spoke, “Activate channel 1.6.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Again, as with Mark prior, Marie began to vibrate and in a bright light soon disappeared. And then Beth followed Marie alike, there were no more scenes projected by the holograph, they simply one by one activated the new frequency and they all vanished, even Agape and Aggie were gone.

When it came time for Sunilo and Matthias to activate their escape, something went amiss. Neither one of them disappeared. Here they were the only two still holding on to the mirror and nothing happened for them.

Matthias then said, “Sunilo, I think we have more work to do before we can go home.”

All Sunilo could do was shake his head in the affirmative, yet still showing a definite reserve upon his facial expression.

Both tried over and over again to activate the channel, but nothing happened. It was more than obvious they were stuck, and must remain. As they finally let go of the mirror and it dropped down into the sand. Sunilo began looking towards the sea, and something was appearing before his eyes.

Out of nowhere a man’s image began to form, until both Matthias and Sunilo saw him. It was then this man materialized and then began to speak.

“My sons, fear not, I am sure you feel like you must have done something wrong. You feel rejection having a feeling of betrayal, like maybe not even belonging.”

As the mystery man began looking at Sunilo, a flash memory came over him and the next thing he knew Sunilo’s consciousness took him

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

back as he was hanging from a cross while being crucified. He felt no pain, he just had perfect awareness of the event. The strangers voice then spoke again.

“Do you remember Sunilo, (Sun Ule No) when this occurred?”

“Yes, I do, I had been regressed and saw this happen to me, but I am not feeling anything about it, why is that?”

“It is because it is done, you do not need to bring back the past, it is time to enter the future. Your future. I have brought back this memory to reveal something.”

As Sunilo looked upon this scene of his past through his conscious mind, he then remembered like it was yesterday, a voice spoke to him and told him that, ‘are all guilty of something.’ The voice that spoke to him was the same voice speaking to him now. It was the Panem Vitae in the form of Walter.

Immediately Sunilo saw himself peer into the future from that point in time hanging on a cross, and what he saw somewhere back 800-years ago, is what he is seeing right now.

He was seeing himself in the future sitting on a beach speaking to the Panem Vitae. And that is exactly what he is doing at this very moment as both timelines reconnected.

Walter then spoke again to them both, “My sons, life is a mystery, but death is even more mysterious. As both of you seek your removal from death, to seek back life, you are confounded by the difficulty of this change.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

But fear not, just as you saw your friends before you, in a twinkling of an eye, you shall be with them again. However, as you have by now ascertained, your work is not done.”

Matthias then asked, “My lord what further help can we be for anyone?”

“My son, we must now repair the damage done as the world returns back to its new time-loop. You had both sacrificed a lot to become the bridge and door, for the others to escape. Now it is time for you to burn that bridge and slam that door shut and return what was never yours to begin with.”

Sunilo responded anxiously, “Return? Return what?”

“My dear sons you are going to return the Serpentine’s Mirror back to its rightful owner. You have been carrying the 8th head of the Serpent. And now it must be returned so the plan can be fulfilled upon earth.”

“How will we go home, and who is the rightful owner?” Matthias enquired.

“The Serpent, of course!”

Sunilo asked “How do we return this back to that snake?”

“You shall bring it back to the Vatican and they shall return it to its rightful owner. Simply tell them you found this upon the beach in Southern France, it was a strange artifact and you felt the Vatican would be the best choice to offer such a find. After you are done, come back to this very place, and wait for further instructions.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Matthias and Sunilo looked at one another wondering how to accomplish this, and stood up upon the sand to look back at Walter, but he was already gone.

They then gathered themselves and using the finances of Matthias, came aboard a fishing cruiser and sailed across the sea to Italy.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(37) The Serpentine's Mirror returns to the Vatican

This may be the most important quest these two will ever have. The implications are both damning and revealing. Matthias and Sunilo are about to return the mystical mirror that even the Vatican doesn't believe exists anymore, there has been no signal for almost 800-years.

The more important question is, will anyone at the Vatican including the Pope have any idea what this mirror is, or what it can do? And for that matter does Matthias and Sunilo really understand what it is that they are doing.

Matthias and Sunilo make the journey, which was much faster than what Giovanni was able to accomplish. In fact, they were standing in front the Vatican gated walls within 2 days.

As they were met at the gate they asked to speak with the Pope, because they had information that was high level importance. However, as the call went back inside the Holy See, the Pope refused to see them.

Matthias then asked, "Can we speak to a high-level Cardinal then? We must return an artifact that was removed from the Vatican, 800-years ago."

The guard was perplexed to say the least, but he did call for a senior official at the Vatican and he came down to meet the wary travelers.

As they met at the gated entrance the Cardinal called for them to step inside and they sat down on a nearby bench. At that time, the

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Cardinal then spoke, "May I help you two, is there a message you would like to give to the Holy Father?"

"Sunilo responded, "Yes, we need to see him, because we have something he will want to have returned."

The Cardinal responded in a joking tone, "I am sure you do my son, but can you imagine how busy the Holy Father would be if he met everyone who attempted to see him."

As the Cardinal was speaking, Matthias took out of a back-pack the Serpentine's Mirror, and simply showed it to the Cardinal.

When the Cardinal looked upon the mirror his face turned ashen, he commented, "That is not what I think it is, is it?"

As he stared at the device, it had turned on to reveal its mystery. On the top portion of the mirror the words spread across the screen in its infamous liquid fashion and he read across the top of the mirror, it revealed,

'Welcome Cardinal, I am back, Signed, The Serpentine's Mirror.'

Within a few seconds the Cardinal jumped off the bench, grabbed the mirror and asked the two to follow, as all three began running speedily towards the inner sanctum, which was quite some distance. As they entered inside the main building, they continued to follow the cardinal as his run now turned into a very brisk walk, while trying to keep his composure and countenance about him.

They were led intently through the entire Vatican walking up and down, taking steps, and scurrying through hallways until they came to hall that led to the papal offices.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Finally, the Cardinal met some other cardinals and asked them to follow him into the main office, while admonishing Matthias and Sunilo to take a seat.

Neither one of them were very comfortable having to deal with this obviously frightening situation, as the Cardinals when into the main office, with the one holding the mirror in his hands.

One could hear voices, but were very faint, unable to make them out. But the voices intensified, allowing the two outside the door to realize this was no game. They could hear shuffling about, with even some screaming voices, such as, “How in the hell...” and “Who gave this to you and where did they get it?”

Silence then filled the room, Matthias and Sunilo were both wondering if they were in danger. Eventually the Cardinal came back out along with the other Cardinals and the rest scurried away all in different directions.

When the original Cardinal walked over to the two men sitting anxiously on the bench, he said, “May I enquire as how you obtained this Mirror?”

Matthias and Sunilo both looked apprehensively at one another and Matthias responded, “We found it on the beach South of Marseilles in France. A stranger walked by and told us to bring it to the Vatican.”

It was then that the Pope himself walked out of the office, he didn't even look at the two sitting down, he simply waved the Cardinal back in while saying, “That must have been him, by God the mirror was on the beach where Giovanni had taken it centuries ago.’ The voice faded away.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

As the two remained outside, both were feeling a bit antsy and they just wanted to leave, the feeling in there was dark and foreboding. An ominous energy was surrounding them. An energy they did not want anything to do with.

It must have been ten minutes before the cardinal returned. He called over to the two men sitting and waving them to arise, and he asked them to come into the office.

Of course, this was not something they really wanted to do but at the same time, how many people get to walk inside the Pope's office, so they got up and followed.

They were asked once again this time by the Pope to take a seat. They both were ushered over to two magnificent chairs with the backs well above their heads, both made of gold, and leather.

They sat down, and the Pope began to speak. "My children, we cannot thank you enough for finding this mirror and returning it to us. We have been missing this for a very long time. Without getting into too much detail, this mirror belongs to the United Nations."

William and Sunilo again looking at each other but this time with confusion on their faces. The Pope continued, "Evidently this artifact was discovered in the Middle East, and was given to the Egyptian antiquities, to hold and during a peace keeping mission for the United Nations, they were taking it to the United States as a relic and somehow it was misplaced.

We believe it occurred possibly due to a shipwreck in the Mediterranean Sea while heading into France. The mirror must have been lost overboard and then washed upon the beach and that is where you found it."

Time-loop Chronicles 3

By this time neither one of them knew what to say because they knew it was nothing but lies. However, they wanted to hear more. Finally, Sunilo asked, “Why would the U.N. want this artifact and what is it?”

“My child, the artifact is centuries old, maybe even thousands of years old, no one really knows, all we do know is this is the missing link to the seven. It had now become the 8th.”

By this time both Matthias and Sunilo almost wanted to crack up but withstood the temptation, because they knew this was B.S. or was it? Was there a seed of truth in what the Pope was saying?”

It was then the Pope thanked the two men and had the Cardinal remove them. Matthias and Sunilo both said you are welcome, and walked out the door.

Amazingly as they left the room with the Cardinal in front of them leading the way Sunilo heard another voice in the room from behind him that sounded very ominous, and with a very low base tone to its voice said, “You know these two were lying don’t you, they didn’t find the mirror on the beach.”

He then heard the Pope’s reply, “Who cares, they can’t stop it now, once the U.N. is given the mirror they will become the world’s global power, they will become the eight head of the International, Management, Alliance, Global, Echelon.”

The voice then said, “Yes, but it has changed for our plans, The U.N. may betray us, and unite with the Eastern factions.”

And that is all Sunilo was able to hear, he then waited until they left the Vatican, in which they were offered a reward by the Cardinal

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

for the sum of \$1000 dollars in Euros, but each refused, saying, "It was our pleasure, but we don't want a reward, thanks anyway.

As the two of them left the Vatican premises, Sunilo told Matthias what was said as they were leaving. Matthias then revealed something he learned from Mark when he was writing book three of the Divine Secret Garden, he said,

"I am not totally sure about this, but I believe Mark told me the United Nations is the Serpents head. It is the world government headquarters, but it has been kept secret from the people.

He also told me that it was going to leave the United States and move away, because America was breaking away from the Global order of what was called the New World Order, and this infuriated the players of the globalist world leaders because they already had their plans in place.

And now their plan is being destroyed, maybe because of this mirror as the 8th head has returned. And the power is reverting from Satan over to Lucifer.

Evidently the United Nations is the 8th head of the beast, but unlike all the other beasts it has no kingdom or land to reign over, it is autonomous."

"I mean this is really strange," Sunilo spoke, "Is this why Walter wanted us to return the Mirror to its rightful owner, so the plans would then change and then bring on the new plan of Global Domination, but not from the West or even Europe and Britain, but from the East, China and Russia?

Time-loop Chronicles 3

And is it this mirror that will give the power over to the Eastern bloc, both militarily and economically. I guess when you are holding the interface to the entire Matrix, you can do anything you want.”

Matthias then countered, “I guess you can, I do not fully understand it all yet, but we know the world is driven by a script, and its authors are not benevolent.”

It was then Matthias and Sunilo began traveling back to the beach as instructed. However, something very strange happened, a loud sonic boom occurred creating an earthquake effect, everything shook, it rattled the very inner soul where the cells of the body all felt like they had shifted.

Immediately Sunilo belted out a yell, “I remember now!”

Matthias having his own issues to deal with, responded with, “So do I. But what is it that you remember?”

Sunilo reported, “I know what Beth was telling me, cause, I remember, New Delhi was Southern India. I remember it is all now, that is where I was living before the shift in time.”

Mathias chimes in, “I remember now that it was a Lion that dwelt with a lamb.”

“What?” Sunilo wondered.

“Oh, never mind, it’s a long story.”

Sunilo then commented, “Whatever happened, whatever we did, whatever that mirror was and why we returned It, and whatever that loud boom was, one thing is revealed, and that is...”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Matthias jumped in, "We're back baby, we're back."

The two put their arms around each other's shoulders and said, **"Let's go home!"**

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(38) The Father seals his children prior to the Harvest

Back on the beach, something was happening, things did not go as planned. The seven of them vanished before one another, yet here we are back on the beach, and now five of them are still sitting in their circle, only two are missing.

They had evidently blacked out, and did not know what had occurred. Because when the vibration began and each one vanished, the others recognized that they each one disappeared before one another.

However, as they all began to slowly awaken, they discovered that each of them were still sitting in their little circle. They looked around confused, but none of them could figure out what had happened.

It was then Marie spoke up, “Where are Sunilo and Matthias? Why is it that they are gone, and we are not?”

Agape then gave his opinion for even he was slightly confused, “Maybe it has something to do with being in different timelines. Whatever we did, we did not go home, we entered another dimension thus revealing Matthias and Sunilo’s disappearance. We knew they were not on the same timeline, now we may be seeing the result of that disconnection.”

After Agape spoke those words, Beth then cried out, “But we saw Mark return home, he met William, they both came out of their cages.”

“Mark responded, “You all saw that? Because I do not recall anything. The last thing I remember is that I was vibrating and then I

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

blacked out. And lo and behold here I am again. So evidently this did not work.”

And then Aggie began to speak, “Look guys, it appears we were wrong even about this.”

She pointed towards the beach and there as obvious as can be, were none other than Sunilo and Matthias walking towards them. Everyone looked at each other with confusion on their face. None of them expected to see those two.

Matthias and Sunilo rejoined the group, and that is when Marie noticed, that the Mirror was missing. Finally, Sunilo spoke up and said, “We were told to return the mirror.”

Agape replied, “Return it to whom?”

Matthias then spoke, “Back to the devil.”

“Say what?” Agape gasped. “Back to the devil, who told you to do that?”

“We were told to bring the mirror back to the Vatican where it was stolen from. We were told it was to reset our timeline.”

“But who told you to do this?”

Sunilo answered, “It was Walter, or Jesus, um, you know...”

They all began to look down into the sand being very perplexed wondering if a great trick had been played on them. It was then they all began to slowly stand up, while brushing the sand off their clothes, and then a voice spoke from behind them.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“You didn’t really think it was going to be that easy, did you?”

As each of them slowly turned around they were all flabbergasted to see William standing there before them. Marie had to respond.

“William, what are you doing here, you should have already been at the feast.”

William with this smirk of a smile on his face, replied, “I was at the feast, we were all together, remember?”

Beth replied, “Excuse me...No I don’t!”

“Well didn’t you read it in my journal?”

Mark responded, “Yeah, but!”

“Well there you go then, we have already had our feast.”

“William, this makes no sense.” Marie chortled.

“Sure, it does, remember, all time is the same time. It is only here that everything is an illusion of the mind.

When you read the journal Sunilo and Matthias were not at the great feast, at least in our timeline, they remained to finish something, we were never told what that was, now I am coming to return all of you back at the same time. We shall all be at the feast together.”

Mark then asked, “So, there are two different feasts?”

“No! All time is the same time.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Agape then asked, "So you have come to bring us back home?"

"Well you certainly didn't think the Serpentine's Mirror could do it did you? But, no, I have come to be part of something magnificent."

Everyone was in state of turmoil realizing that it did seem sort of silly when you think about it. Why would the Serpent allow us to use the mirror to return home? However, everyone was indeed confused.

Finally, William said, "Listen, I have not come alone."

At that moment, appearing next to William was Laura Thol and Maxwell Stram, smiling from ear to ear.

Beth then remarked, wait, "I thought they were between worlds?"

Laura then laughingly said, "Aren't we all?"

Again, next to them appeared Tim and Annie, both clad in their Anasazi Indian apparel. At that very moment all twelve members of their soul group had come together.

Chief as Tim
Annie,
William,
Mark,
Beth,
Marie,
Sunilo,
Matthias,
Agape,
Aggie,

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Laura Thol,
Maxwell Stram.

For the first time since they all entered the prison of their minds they were now all together. And lo and behold, one other appeared before them..., it was Walter.

As Walter had entered the scene everyone took an abated breath to witness what he would say.

Walter then motioned everyone to sit in half circle and he stood in front of them as he began his discourse, and he changed completely into the avatar Jeshua/Jesus.

“The mystery of this realm is all about frequency. Everything is an illusion based upon the programming of the matrix. As you have all rightly surmised, the mirror was an interface, which is connected directly to the matrix controls.

But as with any programmed control, someone else has the keys to the back door. No one was going to allow you to escape. Only the Father and Mother can grant us the right of removal.”

Mark then interjected his thoughts, “Then why were we led to do it this way?”

“My son, when darkness reigns, one searches for anything that appears to bring light. It just made sense that the mirror and the frequency code that Marie was given was that doorway home. And yet it appears that nothing has happened.

However, always remember, nothing is truly what it seems or appears in this world. We gave Marie the code because we were going

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

to cause something to occur, and it would be profound, but it didn't have to happen that way, we just chose this way to reveal a lesson of great import.

It all has to do with the Lost Medieval Prophecy and 'not' the Serpentine's Mirror. You all read it, and you all read its interpretation, yet none of you have figured it out yet.

Beth, you mentioned that Laura and Max were like in-between worlds. Yes, indeed that is true. So was Tim, as the Chief, he was also in-between worlds. We have been interacting with every one of you for a very long time from in-between worlds.

Mark when you took the mirror that eventually resulted in multiple timelines, from that point a nexus was created. A point between all points. That is why Matthias and Sunilo had to become an anchor. One had to be a bridge, the other had to be the doorway.

And that is exactly what had happened until they returned the mirror. Once the mirror found its home the distorted timelines all came back together as one, prior to the next time-loop that is about to occur. No longer is Matthias or Sunilo in a secondary timeline, you are now all together again, in fact we are all together again."

Marie spoke, "I am not sure I understand."

"Listen closely everyone, the mystery of time is a convoluted mesh, and yet it is all tied together as if all time is the same time. Marie, if I am not of this world then I am somewhere else, therefore, I am in a different place. But for some reason you can see and behold me. Why do you think that is?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

“I am not sure, maybe because you have done something, so we can all see you?”

“That is a possibility, but why can you see everyone else, including Tim, Annie, William, Laura and Max?”

“Cause, they caused themselves to appear somehow?”

“Wait!” Agape interjects, “I think I know what he is trying to reveal. **They are not here, we are there.**”

“HAHAHA, very good. You got it.”

Marie speaks again, “You mean we are in between worlds right now?”

“Of course! You have been sealed by the Father. You have been taken out of the frequency of the world, yet you have not been removed from the world, yet!

My friends this is the beginning of the Harvest. At this very moment you still exist in the world, but the world cannot see you or hear you. You could roam about among everyone else, but you would not be there.

This is the prophecy, and the interpretation brought about by the ancient material that had been finally exposed after all this time. Mark, you were John, and you were taught these things long ago, and you knew and understood because you saw into the future through ritual out of body, you knew what needed to be understood to break away from the darkness.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

And only you knew during our time, well, beside myself. I did not share this information with any of the other disciples. We worked together alone to unfold this plan.

Remember John-Mark, I had said, all the other disciples would die, but you would not die like them until we met again. I fulfilled that prophecy when you died in Toulouse long ago and I was right there with you."

"But my lord, the ancient prophecy and the added chapter in the bible was lost, the world never saw it?" Beth replied.

"My child, you have always been so inquisitive, and I like that about you. You go deep into thought to find any morsel of truth that you can find. The world was never meant to have the prophecy, only the chosen elect."

Aggie asked, "Now that we know this, and we know we have been sealed before the time of fulfilment upon this earth, before it returns in the time-loop. How do we leave and return home?"

"Let's not get too ahead of ourselves Aggie. Let me begin by reminding you all of a famous movie you witnessed in this world called the Wizard of Oz. Remember when Dorothy was trying desperately to return home, back to Kansas.

She tried everything. Nothing seemed to work until she clicked her heels three times and voila, she returned home. Now what is the true implication or even the moral to this story?"

Annie spoke up and gave a response, "Well, it seems that all one would have to do is desire to go home and believe and with great trust one can finally return home. But we know that is not really the moral to

Time-loop Chronicles 3

that story is it, because if that were true many would be popping back home instantly.

“That is very cognizant, Annie, the reality of it is, Dorothy never went back home, do you know why?”

Marie jumped in, “Cause, she never left home. Everything she was going through was a dream. None of it was real?”

“And there you have it, the real moral to your dilemma. You were all hijacked in the mind and have lived in a delusion for a very long time while sleeping, believing you have been lost, and trying to find your home.

The reason you are still here is you need to process the illusion you have been part of, to recognize the error of the fallen ones. Everyone heading for the Harvest will witness the illusion crumbling to verify in their heart of hearts that it was all a lie. And none of it was true.

However, there is a much greater reason we are all being gathered together at this time.

Do you remember when I was on earth the dark lords had me executed, the ancient prophecy stated, that the sacrifice was cut off in the middle of the week.

Do any of you understand what that means?

William raised his hand, “I believe it had to do with old 70 weeks prophecy, and that for 69 weeks, things would be determined, but in the 70th week, the sacrifice was cut off. So. within that last week, something happened in the middle that cuts off a sacrifice...”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“William that is what was written, but let me tell you what was meant by all this behind the scenes. I was executed in the middle of the final week, or the first 3 ½ days. When prophecy was revealed, it was always a day to a year as one would count off the days. So, the final week was seven years.

Do you remember what I did in that week?”

“Marie spoke with elation, “You were teaching the people as well as you were privately teaching the disciples. It was your ministry.”

“Very true Marie, here is the problem, the ministry was never finished, it was never completed. I had told the disciples that I would return. Many have taken that out of context and placed it within the return of Christ; coming as lord and king. Well, obviously If this world was never mine, I certainly do not want it now.”

Everyone laughed.

“Therefore, the meaning was this, I was to come back and finish my last 3 ½ years ministry, but this time in private. Whereas the first time I went to the world, this time I go to my chosen seeds.

For the next three and half years I will teach you the final mysteries of the Kingdom of my Father and then we shall all leave together.”

Agape held his hand high, “Will others come home with us?”

“Sure Agape, each one in their own order. Remember, all time is the same time. So, in truth, we all return home together. But in this illusion, it will appear as if we are leaving at different times.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

We shall all meet at the same time, but until everything plays out and everyone fulfills their role as the true seeds, each will find their way home accordingly.

This is all part of the mystery. However, Agape, I think it should be known that you are Peter, and we worked closely together long ago. You were my first disciple, I asked of you to become a fisher of men. You were a fisherman by employment, now I made you a fisher of men.”

Beth then asked, “Are we all the twelve disciples?”

Beth each of you were with me during my first part of the ministry, but only a few of you here were the disciples, the rest of my disciples chose to interact another way.”

It is not needed for them to all be together, it is more needed that the final mystery is revealed. My friends, my brothers and sisters, we have long been together, and now we shall soon return home. But our job is not finished.

As I have come back often in the illusion to rectify mistakes that were made, each of you may also choose to return and interact from the invisible world.

Nevertheless, remember, all time is the same time. What may appear to be different times, is like walking in a straight line. From my point of view, everything is connected one dot at a time, and from your perspective, it all seems out of place and oddly positioned.

Do you understand the real mystery of Tim and the Chief? The Chief didn’t come back to help Tim, and do you know why?”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

“Maxwell Stram jumped in, “I think it is because he was Tim, he would not be coming to help himself but to help others.”

“Absolutely, that is exactly, what happened with Tim and the Chief, sooner or later the actions he took benefited all of you to aid in your awakening. One way or the other the dominos fell precisely to help each one of you, and beyond.

Each of you including all the Father and Mother's children are all connected, it is not just twelve. Twelve is just a starting point. Everyone at the feast were all connected in one form or the other helping and aiding each soul.

Nothing is by accident. Your being here today was not an accident. Everything is choreographed by the Father and Mother like a finely tuned instrument.

Every one of you are unique in the plan but you are all connected as a family. And for the next three and half years, not only will I share with you the secrets and mysteries of our eternal realm, you shall also witness the last days of earth prior to your leaving.

You shall be here, but no one will see you. And there is a reason for this.”

Mark spoke up, “Lord, I am still confused as to how all time is the same time, and how we were all at the feast, yet we were not all there. Matthias and Sunilo were not there. Does this mean there is another feast.”

“First of all, call me brother, I am not your Lord, I am your friend, your brother, and even your sister. We are family, begin to realize, we are all equal.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Let me try to put it this way to help you better understand things beyond your limited realm. Would someone grab me that stick over there on the beach.”

Beth walked over and picked up the stick and handed it to Jeshua. Jeshua then began to draw a straight line about 8-feet long and then proceeded to ask this question.

“I have drawn a line in the sand, now who can tell me where we are on this line, if it represents the beginning of our trek through this earth program all the way to the end.”

Aggie then took the stick out of Jeshua’s hand and she walked over to the end of the line drawn, and she drew a vertical line right near the end of the horizontal line Jeshua had drawn. She then said, “This is my approximate guess.”

Jeshua then looked over to the others and said, “Would you all agree at the approximation of where Aggie had drawn the line?”

The seven of them who had been in the circle began to shake their heads revealing that they all agreed. William then cleared his throat and Tim and Annie began to smile with this quirky reaction.

Jeshua then took the stick again out of Aggie’s hands, and then drew a vertical line where they really were installed within the illusion of time. He drew the vertical line almost near the beginning and not near the end.

He then asked, “Does this shock anyone?”

Agape answered, “At this point nothing shocks me.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Then Marie asked, "We are at the end of time, so how is it possible we are near the beginning?"

"Well I am glad someone was brave enough to ask me that question or my little demonstration would be out to lunch."

Great laughter occurred once again.

"Jeshua continued... "The reason is, we are at the end of a time-loop, but we are not at the end of time. Let me explain it this way, every year you have what is called a planting season, and in the fall, we have a harvest.

At the Harvest we gather the crops and bring them into the barn, and then we toil the field back under or even burn it. But is this the end of our gardening?"

Marie responds, "No, because the next spring we plant again."

"Exactly, your realm exists in cycles, each harvest represents the end of the world, but it is not the end, because the time-loop brings it back to spring. Therefore, what may appear to be the end of your world, is simply another cycle ended and then ready to begin.

I had stated before, 'For verily I say unto you, Till, heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.' Do you see the key point here, you exist in the law of death, and not until everything is fulfilled shall this world pass away?

One season, or ten seasons, do not fulfill the law, do you know why?"

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Agape said, “I will take a stab at it, all the true children must be ready to leave before everything is fulfilled, and until then this realm continues in cycles.”

“Very good Agape, that is the key, I am about my Father’s business, my job is to gather as much fruit as I can and bring them home. Every cycle allows for more fruit to be ready and to be brought into my barn.

Therefore, there are many harvests, and each one allows for more fruit, and the fruit are the true seeds who have also produced fruit, and are ready to return home.

Now you can better understand, how we can be at the end of your world, but not at the end of ‘thee’ world. It is due to the fact there is more work to do. In the scheme of things, we are still at the beginning, and nowhere near the end, because there are still many of our brothers and sister that are sleeping, very soundly I might add.

When you begin to understand this mystery, we are not going back and forth in circles, we are walking forward, however, in our trek through this realm, we pass many cycles, many harvests, and yet we still move forward collecting our precious bounty.

Just like in your world, each year is a new planting season and a new cycle, then comes the following years, leading into decades and centuries, we continue to move forward by ‘looping’ every year, because each year everything is a start over and yet, everything is moving forward. Strange indeed is it not?

Look around you, there are still so many children that need to be awakened and gathered to return back home.”

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

Marie then interjected her thought, "My dear elder brother..."

Jeshua smiled, and said, "You can call me sister also."

Marie continued, "My dearest brother and sister..."

At that very moment Jeshua morphed into a female Christ and all were amazed.

Marie, continued again... "Are we the only ones in this harvest that are ready, surely there must be more?"

"Marie, our job is yet to even begin. I have stated, I am about my Father's business, it is now time that you understand, you are also about your Father's business.

For the next 3 ½ years while I teach you in private, we will be roaming the earth together gathering all the true seeds that have fulfilled their trek in life through their long journey and will be bringing them all home."

"So, you truly are our Lord and Savior! Aggie proclaimed."

"To say I am Lord and savior sounds a little to religious, don't ya think."

Everyone laughed.

"Savior implies, someone needs to be saved from a hell like torment. None of the Father's children are in a state where they need to be saved. All they need is to be awakened.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Let's just say, that I am the pilot of the jet that takes the true children back home, once they come aboard. And furthermore, once you have awakened as you have been, you become my co-pilots. So, it is not about me, it is about all of us."

"Mark then asked, "If we are to gather the fruits as the true children that have also awakened across this planet, how do we reach them?"

"We go to work, and we travel, but not like we did long ago, by mules and horses and foot. As you can plainly see now that your bodies still appear human, they still appear to be confined to this world, yet, you are not truly of this world anymore.

Your bodies frequency has been raised a little higher, enough to cause you to vanish from the sensory perception of the ordinary human. You might be shocked as some small children and even animals may be able to see us, however, many others will not be able to. Like I said, 'become you therefore like a little child...'"

Marie then wondered, "How will we know where to locate the true awakened children, they won't be able to see us. And how we will determine who they are."

"First of all, they will see us, because they will have changed like us. Secondly, the Father will guide us to every awakened soul. And how we will recognize them is, each true soul that is ready to return home will have a glow about them, a white glow as their bodies are regenerating the true spirit of their domain as all of you are in the process of regeneration."

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

As soon as Jeshua had said this, each of them began to glow white, it was not a strong glow, but enough to recognize it from afar. Finally, Jeshua finished his discourse on the beach.

“Every one of the Father’s children will have come together in their own process as group souls all over the earth like we did here, and I have been aiding and helping them all as I did for you.

You didn’t really believe you were the only ones on earth did you. There are many more groups ready to come home. And they are waiting for their pilot to fly them.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

(39) The Mission

Jeshua begins to reveal how everything works.

“Understand, spirits are not contained within bodies, they are contained within their own mind. What a spirit thinks it becomes its own reality even if it is an illusion. A spirit is simply consciousness awareness, but when that consciousness awareness has been hijacked, everything that was real becomes unreal.

Until you understand the real code that has been provided, everyone is still left in the dark. Those who have entered a body do not understand that their thinking, reasoning, and consciousness has been taken over by a machine.

The human body is a machine. You have learned that the Serpentine’s mirror is an interface connected to the matrix. Now today you must understand that your human body is also an interface connected directly to the matrix, the difference is, the avatar has its own unique programming.

There is a scripture that states, that the wisest of man is foolishness unto god. This is revealing, our height of knowledge, wisdom and ability is extremely limited.

Everyone, of you have come to understand, that the Matrix that you are within, controls you, you do not control it. That is why you did not return home, when trying to use the mirror as a projection.

Let me try to explain why this is so. Using our best ability, our greatest wisdom, with all the knowledge we can possibly obtain, even with a few tricks up our sleeve, such as accessing the mirror interface for the matrix, most of it comes from our connection to the matrix, and

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

the matrix is not programmed for you to be allowed any knowledge beyond the programming.”

Sunilo responds, “Then how could we ever break free from this trap?”

“YOU... Cannot. It is not possible! Anything you attempt to do even if you are removed from the avatar keeps you inside the matrix. There is nothing you can do. Remember what I said, of myself I can do nothing, it is the Father within me, that does the good works.

Those who believe they can break free without the Father and Mother are fooling themselves. That is why we led you to experiment with the mirror. We were not trying to destroy your faith, we wanted you to learn there is nothing anyone can do to remove oneself from the matrix.

Some contend, if we can outsmart the matrix then we can decide upon our own to leave or not leave. Sadly, as they continue to repeat their failed logic they have a hard time remembering that they are still stuck in the matrix, having no clue that this is what they have always believed, yet without any verifiable results, they are still stuck like everyone else.”

Laughter ensued...

Marie asked, “When we saw Mark and William by those crystal liquids filled caged, they were different in appearance, we assumed this was their higher-self or higher bodies.”

“Well Marie that is the problem, you know what happens when you assume...”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Agape responded, “Oh, yea we do!” The rest shook their heads in agreement with smiles all around.

Jeshua continues... “We all have varied appearances. Every time you are cast back to earth and reborn, you take on a different appearance, a different body. On the other side of the veil, you can change your appearance by will, just thinking it, and you can become many different faces, sort of in vogue to Lon Chaney the man with a thousand faces.

It is still more of the same illusion. However, our true self, our true being is spirit, without form, nevertheless, we can have form if we need form or desire form. Otherwise to have form is like playing a virtual reality game.

Our truest nature is formless, it is pure consciousness, yet it can do all things. When one enters a house to interact with others it is wise one puts on the garment that are based on the environment, otherwise, you will be unable to conform.

That glow you see about yourselves, is your inner reality starting to push through the illusion.

Whether you are trapped inside these bodies, or you are in the afterlife, where you can project a form. Our forms can even change over the years, some start out well formed and over the years their appearance becomes not so well formed.”

Again, laughter and chuckles pervade the group.

“Therefore, the place where we are at has been created from a programming that all are being linked to within their cages. So, tell me

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

what can you possibly think to accomplish when you are sleeping inside a crystal cage?"

A few responded with answers like, "Not Much!" Another said, "Zippo!"

"The truth of the matter is, we have all been here based upon the programming. And we have very few tools to work with from this side of the stage."

Marie chimed in, "Yet when William was awakened from his cage he went home. How did he do that if we are still inside the program. Once we are removed from the cage, are we not free?"

"My child, William did not go home, he went to the solar system and even returned to earth to witness things from another level, that level is where you are at right now. The question you need to ask is, where was William located while inside the cage?"

"Saturn, I believe." Beth reported.

"And what is Saturn?"

"A planet, a gaseous planet." Marie responded.

"Is Saturn outside the matrix or within?"

"I see what you are saying, even beyond the cage we are still trapped."

"My child, you were trapped as soon as you fell to this level of consciousness. As soon as all of you entered this realm you had fallen into the matrix.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

What you have yet to truly grasp is that William went through a barrier, he was removed from the veil of deception, but he did not return home.

William entered the feast, but this was not the true feast it was a dream we gave him, revealing what the feast would be like, it was a beautiful dream.

Remember, when it was all over he was in a field, sitting under a tree, and even one of his pets from this realm was there to greet him, and the pet said, that William created all of this in his mind.

Do you remember?

Now, let me ask you the proverbial million-dollar question.

What is this realm that you are within? Until you find the answer which you are all so close in discovering you will not fully understand."

"Agape then spoke up, "We are in a dimension of the mind that is no different than a dream. As a spirit we are MIND, we are not body. Somehow our minds were kidnapped, and now we only see what the kidnappers have given to us via their mind, unless we are graced with divine awareness."

"Correct! Did you all understand that?"

Everyone shook their head in the affirmative.

"Okay, that is the final lesson, when we fell to this realm our consciousness changed. Our spirit consciousness was aborted to allow for another mind, another consciousness. It is the same mind Lucifer and all the fallen angels fell into, the only difference is, the true children

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

fell in ignorance, however, the angels knew exactly what they were doing, even though many were following in stupidity.

It is tantamount to being in the army, and your leader of the platoon tells you to do something that you know in your heart of hearts that is it wrong, but you do it anyway because that was the order. Many of the angels fell by following orders, but they knew they were wrong. Therefore, because of this, there can be a reprieve for some of them if they repent.

The reason we were disconnected from the Father and Mother is, we fell in ignorance, because our new mind did not have the connection within to reveal the blunder. That mind had to be developed again through the process of trial and error.

Once the original mind comes back, we awaken. Yet this cannot occur unless the Father and Mother awakens us. You could be on the path home, your many past lives could have been giving you seeds of that old connection, as various puzzle pieces that one day will interlock together.

Just like you have accomplished through a very long and arduous journey, but until you awaken, those seeds remain buried and have yet to finalize the intent or objectivity.

Everything about us at this level is fake except our experiences. None of it is real. You cannot turn a lie into truth. No more than an avatar inside a video-game could choose to leave the game and stand on the outside of it.

We must first acknowledge where we are, and then place our trust and belief in those who can remove us from the maze.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

There is no secret formula, there is no hidden agenda. We must place our value and total importance back into the mind of the Father and Mother as well as you have had 'me' to give you the true path home. I have always been the doorway on your path to returning home.

Simply put, all must wake up!"

Beth then speaks, "So what do we do now?"

"We go about our Father's business and find the true awakened seeds and gather them unto our group. We continue to do this from the four corners of earth, north, south, east and west.

Just like the olden days, we traveled. We shall travel the entire planet gathering the true seeds. The Father will direct us to where they all are. And in almost Star Trek like fashion, we shall teleport around the earth in 1260-days."

"How can we interact with the people here if we cannot be seen?" Sunilo asked.

"My dear friend this is another mystery. Remember when Tim would speak with the Chief. The Chief was not of this world, yet he spoke and interacted with Tim. And then the Chief did become part of this world. Do you understand?"

No one wanted to say anything because they were still unsure. Jeshua then continued... "Remember, the ancient adage? When the truth is given, many will have ears to hear, but will not hear, and they will also have eyes to see but will not see.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

You are now the true seeds of the word, you are MY garden, MY Divine Secret Garden. You as the seed, are now the word. You will be invisible, even though others will have their eyes upon you, they will not see you. And many will offer their ears to hear, but they will not hear you.

There is the secret of the Lost Medieval Prophecy, in that at the end, the true seeds will be invisible to the world, the world will neither see them nor hear them.”

“Then how can we help anyone.” Beth wondered.

“Our job is no longer to help anyone, the books that Mark put out have planted more seeds, added more nourishment, given more aid and support. The books have completed this cycle; however, our job is to gather the fruits made manifest from these works and so much more.

Do you now understand the mystery?”

Agape spoke up, “As amazing as it is, I am finally understanding the magic of it all. The Christ, you Jeshua, is the Word, you planted that word to produce fruit. The fruit becomes those who awaken, and then take their seed of truth and replant it to produce more fruit.

As everyone does this more and more in time will come. And they will do the same. However, just like gardening, many seeds are planted but only the few or the one will take root and begin to grow.

Therefore, as mysterious as the Word is, we begin to harvest those seeds as invisible ghosts and the world is unaware of what is taking place, but the true seeds will be aware, and they will be gathered

Time-loop Chronicles 3

from the four corners of the plantation and join back with their divine illustrious family.”

Jeshua speaks up a little louder this time, “That my friends about sums it up. Now, do your job, go about the world and Harvest the fruit.”

“Is there enough time in the next three and half years to gather everyone. And what happens once the matrix resets; and now those of the new Millennium will be without since the author of these books will have gone home?” Marie contended.

“Remember Marie, ‘MARY!’” As soon as Jeshua called her by her ancient name, Marie’s memory of being Mary became as real as her life now. “Mary, do you remember?”

“Yes, I remember it all like it was yesterday!”

“Do you now recall that even the disciples who I trained still did not understand, most of them were lost, and confused. But the message still somehow came out, and for a long period of time the message still finds a way to break free.

What I am saying is, our job is to gather those who are already waking up, it is not to awaken them, that is not even possible, only the Father can awaken one. Our manifest decree is feed my sheep. Feed my Sheep. Feed my Sheep!

Mark has written the books, that is now complete, however, you are concerned, what about the next thousand years, when people come to this point again, there will be no Mark, there will be no books, So, now, what must happen?

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

The mystery is fulfilled within you, once Mark leaves there will be another John-Mark or another Marie or another Beth, and they also will access these things from their training and work together passing the truth from one to another.

And do you know how? Just like the Chief coming to Tim, we shall all once again come to those who need our help and aid them through their journey over the next millennium. We don't just leave and abandon them, we return to help from the spirit realm.

Nothing is ever lost, the Father and Mother works with whom they desire to work through, and then the baton is passed to another who also pleases the Father and Mother.

There is no failure, there is only the illusion of time."

It was then everyone began their trek to bring home the true children. As they returned to the Cottage to finalize their plans, they passed many people and yet none of them had eyes to see them. nor even ears, to hear. They were ghosts among the living, or the dead in this case.

The soul group of twelve along with the Panem Vitae as Jeshua, spent the next three and half years learning, and gathering the souls that were ready, each one growing and learning in their own way being personally directed by Jeshua leading them all back to their Father and Mother.

Their duty was to find them and add them to the group to finish the journey. As they traveled across the planet, they discovered and located all the true children who were ready to go home.

Time-loop Chronicles 3

Many of them were relieved, they did not know why they became invisible nor did they fully understand what their mission was until they rejoined the family and it all became clear.

Mark was inspired to write one more book during the first year, he asked if he could write the book and then somehow get it to the visible humans. Jeshua reminded him like the Chief was able to do, you can interact with the visible as you so choose, but reminded him not to stay long.

It was then Mark took the time to write one final book and he titled it, **Time-Loop Chronicles 3 – The Lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine’s Mirror.**

He created the time-loop books as works of fiction, but those who could hear and those who could see, knew differently in their heart. However, it kept the powers that be from attacking since it was perceived a work of fiction.

The stark reality is, everything is a work of fiction until one has the eyes to see, and the ears to hear. Then it all becomes real.

Everyone knew the time-loop was getting closer and closer. And the world was going to soon come to its epic-end and then begin again.

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

(40) Returning Home

Finally, the day had come, the world had become again exactly as Tim, William and now John-Mark had written about. It was now time.

All of them, and there were great numbers by now, the twelve had morphed into a large group, and they had returned to the beach, all gathered together, after spending 3 ½ years, they were all united.

It was not about having the mirror, for it was not needed. As they had finally come back together, they spoke to one another with great joy knowing their time had come to leave fantasy island, and return, back to reality.

As they all stood on the beach, they were directed to look upwards, it was as if suddenly the heavens appeared to open, like someone tearing paper apart. And a bright light of such a brightness, greater than even the sun was exposed. But this light was only visible to the true children, no one else in the world could see it, or hear it.

The light then slowly entered upon the beach where they were all standing, as they cried out with great shouts of glory, this amazing light enveloped them all, and their bodies became brighter as their true inner light was now becoming their real form, revealing that they were nothing but energy. The light was the FATHER and MOTHER.

Cries of joy and laughter with so many other emotions soared from within them, and then they heard the voice. It was the Caelestus Pater, and the Caelestus Mater, the Divine Father and Mother.

“My children, of whom I am well pleased, welcome back to your home.”

Time-loop Chronicles 3

They were all singing songs, songs they never knew but somehow the words were within them.

They then became aware of all things, it was as if they became the all-knowing, all omniscient. It was then they understood everything.

They traveled the dimensions of the beyond. They coursed through the universes of the divine mind of the Father. Everything was perfect, the creations were real, nothing was a fabrication or an illusion. All of it was eternal everlasting.

It was then everyone heard a voice that penetrated all universes. Where they all had traveled in spirit did not matter they all heard the voice.

Everyone knew who this voice was. And everyone stopped what they were doing. As the voice cried out,

“Feed my sheep, feed my sheep, feed my sheep. It is time once again we go about our Father’s business.”

The Father and Mother spoke,

**“Go now and find the
rest of my children and
bring them home.”**

The lost Medieval Prophecy & the Serpentine's Mirror

DISCLAIMER

This is a work of fiction in the genre of science fiction and time travel. The entire basic philosophy of this book was based on a theory the author had, that is why it was placed within science fiction.

The author cannot humanly prove this theory is correct. But adding information past and present together, it becomes a summation of the whole.

Although some characters and geographical locations and even the times of the events may appear to refer to actual people. The intended subject matter was simply for entertainment and any events paralleling with actual names, places and events was simply for stimulation and writer clarity and not intended to copy a real person or place except for reasons of novelty. All persons portrayed are fictitious per the story.

Note: The entire series of the Time-Loop Chronicles was designed to wrap truth within fiction. It is up to the reader to decide where the separation may be.

The Author makes no legal claims or representation of any kind as to the authenticity of the subject matter.